

THE DOCTRINE
OF THE
LAW and GRACE
UNFOLDED:

O R,

A Discourse touching the *Law* and *Grace*. The nature of the one, and the nature of the other: shewing what they are, as they are the two Covenants; and likewise who they be, and what their Conditions are, that be under either of these two Covenants.

WHEREIN,

For the better Understanding of the Reader, there is several Questions answered touching the *Law* and *Grace*, very easie to be read, and as easie to be understood, by those that are the Sons of Wisdom, the Children of the second Covenant.

A L S O,

Several Titles set over the several Truths contained in this Book, for thy sooner finding of them; which are those following the Epistle.

Published by that Poor and Contemprible Creature,
John Bunyan of *Bedford*.

The Law made nothing perfect, but the bringing in of a better Hope did; by the which we draw nigh to God, Heb. 7. 19. Therefore we conclude, that a man is justified by Faith, without the Deeds of the Law, Rom. 3. 28. To him therefore that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his Faith is counted for Righteousness, Rom. 4. 5.

LONDON, Printed for Nath. Ponder at the *Peacock*
in the *Poultry*. 1 6 8 5.

THE DOCTORS
OF THE
ROYAL COLLEGE
OF PHYSICIANS

IN VIRTUE OF A RESOLUTION
PASSED AT A MEETING OF THE
COUNCIL OF THE COLLEGE
HOLDEN ON THE 14TH DAY OF
JANUARY 1881



AND IN VIRTUE OF A RESOLUTION
PASSED AT A MEETING OF THE
COUNCIL OF THE COLLEGE
HOLDEN ON THE 14TH DAY OF
JANUARY 1881

AND IN VIRTUE OF A RESOLUTION
PASSED AT A MEETING OF THE
COUNCIL OF THE COLLEGE
HOLDEN ON THE 14TH DAY OF
JANUARY 1881

AND IN VIRTUE OF A RESOLUTION
PASSED AT A MEETING OF THE
COUNCIL OF THE COLLEGE
HOLDEN ON THE 14TH DAY OF
JANUARY 1881

AND IN VIRTUE OF A RESOLUTION
PASSED AT A MEETING OF THE
COUNCIL OF THE COLLEGE
HOLDEN ON THE 14TH DAY OF
JANUARY 1881

AND IN VIRTUE OF A RESOLUTION
PASSED AT A MEETING OF THE
COUNCIL OF THE COLLEGE
HOLDEN ON THE 14TH DAY OF
JANUARY 1881

AND IN VIRTUE OF A RESOLUTION
PASSED AT A MEETING OF THE
COUNCIL OF THE COLLEGE
HOLDEN ON THE 14TH DAY OF
JANUARY 1881

The Epistle to the Reader.

Reader,

IF at any time there be held forth by the Preacher, the freeness and fulness of the Gospel, together with the readiness of the Lord of Peace to receive those that have any desire thereto; presently it is the spirit of the World to cry out, Sure this man disdains the Law, slights the Law, and counts that of none effect; and all because there is not, together with the Gospel, mingled the Doctrine of the Law, (which is not a right dispensing of the Word according to truth and knowledge.) Again, if there be the terror, horror, and severity of the Law, discovered to a People by the Servants of Jesus Christ, (though they do not speak of it, to the end People should trust to it, by relying on it as it is a Covenant of Works; but rather that they should be driven further from that Covenant, even to embrace the tenders and privileges of the second) yet, poor Souls, because they are unacquainted with the natures of these two Covenants, or either of them; therefore, say they, here is nothing but preaching of the Law, thundering of the Law; when alas, if these two be not held forth (to wit) the Covenant of Works, and the Covenant of Grace, together with the nature of the one, and the nature of the other; Souls will never be able neither to know what they are by Nature, nor what they lie under. Also, neither can they understand what Grace is, nor how to come from under the Law, to meet God, in, and through that other most glorious Covenant; through which, and only through which, God can communicate of himself, grace, Glory, yea, even all the good things of another World.

I having considered these things, together with others, have made bold to present yet once more to thy view (my

The Epistle

Friend) something of the mind of God, to the end, if it shall be but blessed to thee, thou mayest be benefited thereby. For verily these things are not such as are ordinary, and of small concernment, but do absolutely concern thee to know, and that experimentally too, if ever thou do partake of the glory of God through Jesus Christ, and so escape the terrour and unsupportable vengeance, that will otherwise come upon thee through his Justice, because of thy living and dying in thy Transgressions against the Law of God. And therefore while thou livest here below, it is thy duty (if thou wish thy self happy for the time to come) to give up thy self to the studying of these two Covenants, treated of in the ensuing Discourse ; and so to study them, untill thou through grace, do, not only get the notion of the one and of the other in thy head ; but untill thou do feel the very power, life, and glory of the one and of the other. For take this for granted, he that is dark as touching the scope, intent, and nature of the Law, is also dark as to the scope nature, and glory of the Gospel : And also he that hath but a notion of the one, will hardly have any more than a notion of the other.

And the reason is this, because so long as People are ignorant of the nature of the Law, and of their being under it, that is, under the curse and condemning power of it, by reason of their sin against it ; so long they will be careless, and negligent as to the enquiring after the true knowledge of the Gospel. Before the Commandement came, (that is in the spirituality of it) *Paul* was alive, (that is) thought himself safe, which is clear, *Rom. 7. 9, 10.* compared with the 3. of *Phil.* the 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11. *ver. &c.* But vvhhen that came, and vvas indeed discovered unto him by the Spirit of the Lord, then *Paul* dies (*Rom. 7.*) to all his former life (*Phil. 3.*) and that man vvhich before could content himself to live, though ignorant of the Gospel, cries out novv, *I count all things but loss, for the excellency of the knowledge of Jesus Christ my Lord, ver. 8.* Therefore, I say, so long they vwill be ignorant of the nature of the Gospel, and hovv glorious a thing it is to be found vwithin the bounds of it ;
for

to the Reader.

for we use to say, That man that knoweth not himself to be sick, that man will not look out for himself a Physician; and this Christ knew full well, where he saith, *The whole have no need of a Physician, but them that are sick*: that is, none will in truth desire the Physician, unless they know they be sick. That man also, that hath got but a notion of the Law (a notion, that is the Knowledge of it in the Head, so as to discourse and talk of it) if he hath not felt the power of it, and that effectually too, he, it is to be feared, will at the best be but a Notionest in the Gospel; he will not have the experimental Knowledge of the same in his Heart: nay, he will not seek, nor heartily desire after it, and all because, as I said before, he hath not Experience of the wounding, cutting, killing nature of the other.

I say therefore, if thou wouldst know the Authority and Power of the Gospel, labour first to know the Power and Authority of the Law; for I am verily persuaded, that the want of this one thing, namely, the Knowledge of the Law, is one cause why so many are ignorant of the other. That man that doth not know the Law, doth not know indeed and in truth, that he is a Sinner; and that man that doth not know he is a Sinner, doth not know savingly that there is a Saviour.

Again, That man that doth not know the nature of the Law, that man doth not know the nature of Sin; and that man that knoweth not the nature of Sin, will not regard to know the nature of a Saviour. This is proved, *John 8. 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36. ver.* This People were Professors, and yet did not know the Truth (the Gospel,) and the reason was, because they did not know themselves, and so not the Law. I would not have thee mistake me, Christian Reader, I do not say, that the Law of it self will lead any Soul to Jesus Christ; but the Soul, being killed by the Law, through the operation of its severity seizing on the Soul, then the man, if he be enlightened by the Spirit of Christ, to see where Remedy is to be had, will not, through Grace, be contented without the real and saving Knowledge, through Faith, of him.

The Epistle.

If thou wouldest then wash thy Face clean, first take a Glass and see where it is dirty; that is, If thou wouldest indeed have thy Sins washed away by the Blood of Christ, labour first to see them in the Glass of the Lavv, (*Jam. 1.*) and do not be afraid to see thy besmeared Condition, but look on every Spot thou hast; for he that looks on the foulness of his Face by the halfe, will wash by the halfe: even so he that looks on his Sins by the halfe, he will seek for Christ by the halfe. Reckon thy self therefore, I say, the biggest Sinner in the World, and be persuaded, that there is none worse than thy self; then let the Guilt of it seize on thy Heart, then also go in that case and condition to Jesus Christ, and plunge thy self into his Merits, and the virtue of his Blood; and after that thou shalt speak of the things of the Lavv, and of the Gospel, experimentally; and the very Language of the Children of God shall feelingly drop from thy Lips, and not till then.

Let this therefore learn thee thus much; He that hath not seen his lost Condition, hath not seen a safe Condition; he that did never see himself in the Devils Snare, did never see himself in Christ's Bosom. *This my Son was dead, and is alive again. Was lost and is found, with whom we all had our Conversation in time past. But now are (so many of us as believe) returned to Jesus Christ, the chief Shepherd and Bishop of our Souls.*

I say therefore, if thou do find in this Treatise, in the first place, something touching the Nature, End, and extent of the Lavv, do not thou cry out therefore all on a sudden, saying, Here is nothing but the Terror, Horror, and thundering Sentences of the Lavv.

Again, If thou do find in the second part of this Discourse, something of the freeness and fullness of the Gospel; do not thou say then neither, here is nothing but Grace, therefore surely an undervaluing of the Lavv. No, but read it quite thorow, and so consider of it; and (I hope) thou shalt find the two Covenants (which all men are under either the one or the other) discovered, and held forth in their Natures, Ends, Bounds, together with the state and con-

To the Reader.

condition of them that are under the one, and of them that are under the other.

There be some that through Ignorance do say, how that such men as preach Terror and Amazement to Sinners, are besides the Book, and are Ministers of the Letter, the Law, and not of the Spirit, the Gospel; but I would answer them, citing them to the 16. of *Luke*, from the nineteenth Verse to the end; and the *1 Cor.* 6. 9, 10. and *Gal.* 3. 10. *Rom.* 3. from the ninth Verse to the nineteenth: only this Caution I would give by the way, how that they which preach Terror, to drive Souls to the obtaining of Salvation, by the Works of the Law, that preaching is not the right Gospel-preaching. Yet when Saints speak of the sad state that men are in by Nature, to discover to Souls their need of the Gospel, this is honest preaching (see *Romans* 3. the 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, &c.) and he that doth do so, he doth the Work of a Gospel-Minister.

Again, there are others that say, because we do preach the free, full, and exceeding Grace discovered in the Gospel, therefore we make void the Law; which indeed, unless the Gospel be held forth in the Glory thereof without Confusion, by mingling the Covenant of Works therewith, the Law cannot be established. *Do we through Faith, or preaching of the Gospel, make void the Law?* Nay, stay, saith Paul, God forbid. *We do thereby establish the Law,* *Rom.* 3. 31.

And verily, he that will indeed establish the Law, or set it in its own place, (for so I understand the Words) must be sure to hold forth the Gospel in its right colour and nature; for if a man be ignorant of the nature of the Gospel, and the Covenant of Grace, they, or he, will be very apt to remove the Law out of its place, and that because they are ignorant, not knowing what they say, nor whereof they affirm.

The Epistle

And let me tell you, if a man be ignorant of the Covenant of Grace, and the bounds and boundlesness of the Gospel, though he speaks and makes mention of the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and also of the Name of the New Covenant, and the Blood of Christ; yet at this very time, and in these very Words, he will preach nothing but the Law, and that as a Covenant of Works.

Reader, I must confess it is a wonderful mysterious thing, and he had need have a wiser Spirit than his own that can rightly set these two Covenants in their right places, that when he speaks of the one, he doth not jumble the other out of its place. O, to be so well enlightned, as to speak of the one, that is the Law, for to magnifie the Gospel; and also, to speak of the Gospel, so as to establish (and yet not to idolize) the Law, nor any particular thereof, it is rare, and to be heard and found but in very few mens Breasts.

If thou should'st say, what is it to speak to each of these two Covenants, so as to set them in their right places, and also to use the terror of the one, so as to magnifie and advance the Glory of the other?

To this I shall answer also, read the ensuing Discourse but with an understanding Heart, and it is like thou wilt find a Reply therein to the same purpose, which may be to thy satisfaction.

Reader, if thou do find this Book empty of fantastical Expressions, and without light, vain, whimsical Scholar-like terms, thou must understand, it is because I never went to School to *Aristotle* or *Plato*, but was brought up at my Father's House, in a very mean condition, among a Company of poor Country-men. But if thou do find a parcel of plain, yet sound, true, and home Sayings, attribute that to the Lord Jesus, his Gifts and Abilities, which he hath bestowed upon such a poor Creature as I am, and have been. And if thou, being a seeing Christian, dost find me coming short, though rightly touching at some things, attribute that either to my Brevity, or,

to the Reader.

if thou wilt, to my Weaknesses, (for I am full of them.)
A word or two more, and so I shall have done with
this.

And the first is, Friend, if thou do not desire the
Salvation of thy Soul, yet I pray thee to read this Book
over with serious Consideration; it may be it will stir
up in thee some desires to look out after it, which at pre-
sent thou mayest be without.

Secondly, if thou do find any stirrings in thy Heart,
by thy reading such an unworthy man's Works as mine
are; be sure that in the first place thou give Glory to
God, and give way to thy Convictions, and be not too
hasty in getting them off from thy Conscience; but let
them so work till thou do see thy self by nature, void of
all Grace, as Faith, Hope, Knowledge of God, Christ,
and the Covenant of Grace.

Thirdly, then in the next place, fly in all haste to
Jesus Christ, thou being sensible of thy lost Condition
without him, secretly perswading of thy Soul, that Jesus
Christ standeth open armed to receive thee, to wash
away thy Sins, to cloath thee with his Righteousness; and
is willing, yea, heartily willing, to present thee before
the Presence of the Glory of God, and among the innu-
merable Company of Angels with exceeding Joy. This
being thus, in the next place, do not satisfie thy self
with these seeret and first Perswasions, which do, or may
encourage thee to come to Jesus Christ; but be restless,
till thou do find by blessed experience, the glorious
Glory of this the second Covenant extended unto thee,
and sealed upon thy Soul with the very Spirit of the
Lord Jesus Christ. And that thou mayest not slight this
my Counsell, I beseech thee in the second place, consider
these following things.

First, if thou do get off thy Convictions, and not the
right way, (which is by seeing thy Sins washed away by
the Blood of Jesus Christ) it is a question whether ever
God will knock at thy Heart again or no; but rather say,
Such a one is joyned to Idols; let him alone. Hof. 4. 17.

Though

The Epistle

Though he be in a natural state, *let him alone*. Though he be in, or under the Curse of the Law, *let him alone*. Though he be in the very hand of the Devil, *let him alone*. Though he be a going post-haste to Hell, *let him alone*. Though his Damnation will not only be Damnation for Sins against the Law, but also for slighting the Gospel, yet, *let him alone*. My Spirit, my Ministers, my Word, my Grace, my Mercy, my Love, my Pity, my common Providences, shall no more strive with him, *let him alone*. O sad! O miserable! who would slight Convictions that are on their Souls, which tend so much for their good?

Secondly, if thou shalt not regard how thou do put off Convictions, but put them off without the precious Blood of Christ being savingly applied to thy Soul; thou art sure to have the mispending of that Conviction to prove the hardning of thy Heart against the next time thou art to hear the Word preached or read. This is commonly seen, that those Souls that have not regarded those Convictions that are at first set upon their Spirits, do commonly (and that by the just Judgments of God upon them) grow more hard, more senseless, more feared and sottish in their Spirits; for some, who formerly would quake and weep, and relent under the hearing of the Word, do now for the present sit so senseless, so feared, and hardned in their Consciences, that certainly if they should have Hell-fire thrown in their Faces, as it is sometimes cried up in their Ears, they would scarce be moved; and this comes upon them as a just Judgment of God, *2 Thess. 2. 11, 12.*

Thirdly, if thou do slight these, or those Convictions, that may be set upon thy Heart, by reading of this Discourse, or hearing of any other good man preach the Word of God sincerely; thou wilt have the stifling of these or those Convictions to account and answer for at the Day of Judgment: not only thy Sins that are commonly committed by thee in thy Calling and common Discourse, but thou shalt be called to a reckoning for slight-

to the Reader.

slighting Convictions; disregarding of Convictions, which God useth as a special means to make poor Sinners see their lost Condition, and the need of a Saviour. Now here I might add many more Considerations besides these, to the end thou mayest be willing to tend, and listen to Convictions; as,

First, consider thou hast a precious Soul, more worth than the whole World; and this is commonly worked upon (if ever it be saved) by Convictions.

Secondly, this Soul is (for certain) to go to Hell, if thou shalt be a sligher of Convictions.

Thirdly, if that go to Hell, thy Body must go thither too, and then never to come out again. *Now consider this, you that (are apt to) forget God, (and his Convictions) lest he tear you in pieces, and there be none to deliver,* Psal. 50. 22.

But if thou shalt be such a one, that shalt, notwithstanding thy reading of thy Misery, and also of God's Mercy, still persist to go on in thy Sins; know in the first place, that here thou shalt be left, by the things that thou readeest, without excuse; and in the World to come thy Damnation will be exceedingly aggravated, for thy not regarding of them, and turning from thy Sins; which was not only reproved by them, but also for rejecting of that Word of Grace that did instruct thee now, and which way, thou should'st be saved from them. And so farewell, I shall leave thee, and also this Discourse, to God, who I know will pass a righteous Judgment both upon that and thee. I am yours, though not to serve your Lusts and filthy minds, yet to reprove, instruct, and according to that proportion of Faith and Knowledge which God hath given me, to declare unto you the way of Life and Salvation. Your Judgings, Railings, Surmizings, and disdainings of me, that I shall leave till the fiery Judgment comes, in which the Offender shall not go unpunished, be he you or me; yet I shall pray for you, wish well to you, and do you what good I can. And that I might not write or speak in vain, Christian, pray

The Epistle, &c.

pray for me to our God, with much Earnestness, Fervency, and frequently, in all your Knockings at our Fathers door, because I do very much stand in need thereof; for my Work is great, my Heart is vile, the Devil lieth at watch, the World would fain be saying, aha, aha, thus we would have it; and of my self, keep my self I cannot; trust my self I dare not; if God do not help me, I am sure it will not be long before my Heart deceive me, and the World have their Advantage of me; and so God be dishonoured by me, and thou also ashamed to own me. O therefore be much in Prayer for me, thy Fellow, I trust in that glorious Grace that is conveyed from Heaven to Sinners, by which they are not only sanctified here in this World, but shall be glorified in that which is to come. Unto which, the Lord of his Mercy bring us all.

JOHN BUNYAN.

31 DE 60

These

These are the several **T**itles
which are set over the se-
veral *Truths* contained in
this Book, for thy sooner
finding of them.

The First Part.

1. **T**HE *Words of the Text* opened, and
the *Doctrines* laid down.
2. *What the Covenant of Works is, and
when it was given.*
3. *What it is to be under the Covenant
of Works.*
4. *Who they are that are under the Co-
venant of Works.*
5. *What men may attain to, that are
under this Covenant of Works.*

The

The Titles of the several Truths

The Second Part.

1. *The Doctrine proved.*
2. *The New Covenant made. with Christ.*
3. *The Conditions of the New Covenant.*
4. *The Suretiship of Christ.*
5. *Christ the Messenger of the New Covenant.*
6. *Christ the Sacrifice of the New Covenant.*
7. *Christ the High Priest of the New Covenant.*
8. *Christ compleatly fulfilled the Conditions of the New Covenant.*
9. *The Covenant of Grace unchangeable; the Opposers answered.*
10. *Who, and how men are actually brought into the New Covenant.*
11. *A Word of Experience.*
12. *The Priviledges of the New Covenant.*
13. *Two Hell-bred Objections answered.*

contained in this Book.

14. *A Use of Examination about the Old Covenant.*

15. *A Legal Spirit.*

16. *The Use of the New Covenant.*

17. *The unpardonable Sin.*

18. *Objections answered for their Comfort who would have their part in the New Covenant.*

THE

31 DE 60

I

THE
DOCTRINE
OF THE

Law and Grace unfolded:

OR,

*A Discovery of the Law and Grace, the
Nature of the one, and the Nature of
the other, as they are the two Cove-
nants, &c.*

Rom. 6. 14.

*For ye are not under the Law, but un-
der Grace.*

IN the three former Chapters, the Apostle is pleading for the salvation of sinners by Grace, without the Works of the Law, to the end he might confirm the Saints, and also that he might win over all those that did oppose the truth of this Doctrine, or else leave them the more without excuse; and that he might so do, he taketh in hand, First, to shew the state of all men naturally, or as they

B

come

2 *The words of the Text opened.*

come into the world by Generation, saying in the third Chapter, *There is none righteous, no not one; there is none that understandeth, there is none that doth good, &c.* As if he had said, It seems there is a Generation of men that think to be saved by the righteousness of the Law, but let me tell them, that they are much deceived, in that they have already sinned against the Law. *For by the disobedience of one, many, yea all, was brought into a state of condemnation;* Rom. 5. 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19. Now in the sixth Chapter, he doth as if he had turned him round to the Brethren, and said, My Brethren you see now that it is clear and evident, that it is freely by the Grace of Christ, that we do inherit eternal life. And again, for your comfort my brethren, let me tell you, that your condition is wondrous safe, in that you are under Grace, for saith he, *Sin shall not have dominion over you*, that is, neither the damning power, neither the filthy power, so as to destroy your souls; *For you are not under the Law*, that is you are not under that, that will damn you for sin; *But (you are) under grace*, or stand thus in relation to God, that though you have sinned, yet you shall be pardoned. *For you are not under the Law, &c.* If any should ask what is the meaning of the word [UNDER] I answer, it signifieth you are not held, kept, or shut up by it, so as to appear before God under that administration,

ministration, and none but that; or thus, you are not now bound by the authority of the Law, to fulfil it, and obey it, so as to have no salvation without you so do; or thus, if you transgress against any one tittle of it, you by the power of it must be condemned: No, no, for you are not so under it, that is, not thus under the Law. Again, *For you are not under the Law*; what is meant by this word [LAW?] The word Law, in Scripture, may be taken more ways then one, as might be largely cleared. There is the Law of Faith, the Law of Sin, the Law of Men, the Law of Works, otherwise called the Covenant of Works, or the first, or old Covenant, *Heb. 8. 13. In that he saith a new Covenant*, (which is the Grace of God, or commonly called the Covenant of Grace) *he hath made the first old*; that is the Covenant of Works, or the Law. I say therefore the word [LAW] and the word [GRACE] in this sixth of the *Romans*, do hold forth the two Covenants, which all Men are under, that is, either the one or the other. *For ye are not under the Law*; that is, you to whom I do now write these words, who are and have been effectually brought into the faith of Jesus: you are not under the Law, or under the Covenant of Works. He doth not therefore apply these words to all, but to some, when he saith, *But ye, mark, [YE] ye Believers, ye Converted persons,*

4 *And the Doctrines laid down.*

sons, ye Saints, ye that have been born again. *Ye, for ye are not under the Law*, implying others are, that are in their natural state, that have not been brought into the Covenant of Grace, by faith in Jesus Christ. The words therefore being thus understood, there is discovered these two Truths in them.

Doct. 1. First, That there are some in Gospel times, that are under the Covenant of Works.

Doct. 2. Secondly, That there is never a Believer under the Law, (as it is a Covenant of Works, but under Grace through Christ) *For ye, you Believers, you Converted persons, Ye are not under the Law, but under Grace*; or, for you are delivered and brought into, or under the Covenant of Grace.

For the first, That there are some that are under the Law, or under the Covenant of Works, see I pray you that Scripture in the third of the *Romans*, where the Apostle speaking before of sins against the Law, and of the denunciations thereof, against those that are in that condition, he saith, *What things soever the Law saith, it saith to them that are under*; Mark, it saith to them that are under *the Law*, *That every mouth may be stopped, and all the World become guilty before God*, Rom. 3. 19. That is, all those that are under the Law, as a Covenant of Works, that are yet in their sins, and unconverted, as I told you before. Again,
Gal.

And the Doctrines laid down.

Gal. 5. 18. He saith, *But if you be led by the Spirit, you are under the Law*, implying again, that those which are for sinning against the Law, or the works of the Law, either as it is the old Covenant; these are under the Law, and not under the Covenant of Grace. Again, *Gal. the 3. the 10. Verse*, there he saith, *For as many as are of the Works of the Law are under the Curse*; that is, they that are under the Law, are under the Curse; for mark, they that are under the Covenant of Grace are not under the Curse. Now there are but two Covenants; therefore it must needs be that they that are under the Curse are under the Law; seeing those that are under the other Covenant, are not under the Curse, but under the Blessing. *So then, they which be of faith, are blessed with faithful Abraham*, but the rest are under the Law, *Gal. 3. 9.* Now I shall proceed to what I do intend to speak unto.

First, I shall shew you what the Covenant of Works, or the Law is, and when it was first given, together with the nature of it.

Secondly, I shall shew you what it is to be under the Law, or Covenant of Works, and the miserable state of all those that are under it.

Thirdly, I shall shew you who they are that are under this Covenant, or Law.

6 *What the Covenant of Works is,*

Fourthly, I shall shew you how far a man may go, and yet be under this Covenant, or Law.

For the first, What this Covenant of Works is, and when it was given?

The Covenant of Works, or the Law here spoken of, is the Law delivered on Mount *Sinai*, to *Moses*, in two Tables of stone, in ten particular branches, or heads; for this see *Gal. 4.* The Apostle speaking there of the Law, and of some also that through delusions of false Doctrine, was brought again as it were under it, or at least was leaning that way, *Verse 21.* He saith, As for you that desire to be under the Law, I will shew you the mystery of *Abrahams* two Sons which he had by *Agar* and *Sarah*; these two do signifie the two Covenants, the one named *Agar*, signifies Mount *Sinai* where the Law was delivered to *Moses* on two Tables of stone, *Exod. 24. 12. Chap. 34. 1. Deut. 10. 1.* Which is that, that whosoever is under, he is destitute of, and altogether without the Grace of Christ, in his heart at the present, *Gal. 5. 3, 4.* For I testifie again to every man (saith he) speaking to the same People, that Christ is become of none effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the Law, namely, that given on Mount *Sinai*. Ye are fallen from Grace. That is, not that any can be justified by the Law; but his meaning is, all those that seek justification

tion by the Works of the Law, they are not such as seek to be under the second Covenant, the Covenant of Grace. Also the 2 Cor. 3. 7, 8. The Apostle speaking again of these two Covenants, he saith, *For if the Ministration of Death* (or the Law, for it is all one) *written and engraven in stones* (mark that) *was glorious: how shall not the Ministration of the Spirit* (or the Covenant of Grace) *be rather glorious?* As if he had said, 'Tis true, there was a glory in the Covenant of Works, and a very great excellency did appear in it; namely, in that given in the stones on *Sinai*, yet there is another Covenant, the Covenant of Grace, that doth exceed it for comfort and glory.

But secondly, Though this Law was delivered to *Moses* from the hands of Angels in two Tables of Stone on Mount *Sinai*; yet this was not the first appearing of this Law to Man; but even this in substance (tho possibly not so openly) was given to the first Man *Adam*, in the garden of *Eden*, in these words, *And the Lord God commanded the man, saying, Of every Tree in the Garden thou mayest freely eat. But of the Tree of knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it; for in the day thou eatest thereof, thou shalt surely die*, Gen. 2. 16, 17. Which Commandment then given to *Adam*, did contain in it, a forbidding to do any one of those things, that was and is accounted evil, although

8 *What the Covenant of Works is,*

though at that time it did not appear so plainly, in so many particular heads, as it did when it was delivered on Mount *Sinai*: but yet the very same, and that I shall prove thus.

God commanded *Adam* in Paradise to abstain from all evil against the first Covenant, and not from some sins only: but if God had not commanded *Adam* to abstain from the sins spoken against the Ten Commandments, he had not commanded to abstain from all, but from some; therefore it must needs be, that he then commanded to abstain from all sins forbidden in the Law given on Mount *Sinai*. Now that God commanded to abstain from all evil, or sin, against any of the Ten Commandments, when he gave *Adam* the Command in the Garden, it is evident, in that he did punish the sins that was committed against those Commands, that was then delivered on Mount *Sinai*, before they were delivered on Mount *Sinai*, which will appear as followeth.

The first, second, and third Commandments were broken by *Pharaoh* and his men; for they had false Gods which the Lord Executed Judgment against (as in *Exodus* 12. 12.) and blasphemed their true God; (*Exod.* 7. 17. to the end) for their Gods could neither deliver themselves, nor their people from the hand of God; but in the things wherein they dealt proudly, he was above them, *Exod.* 18. 11. Again,

Again, Some judge that the Lord punished the sin against the second Commandment, which *Jacob* was in some measure guilty of, in not purging his house from false gods, with the defiling of his daughter *Dinah*, *Gen. 34. 2.*

Again, We find that *Abimelech* thought the sin against the third Commandment so great, that he required no other security of *Abraham* against the fear of mischief that might be done to him by *Abraham*, his son, and his sons son: but only *Abraham's* Oath; (*Gen. 21. 23.*) the like we see between *Abimelech* and *Isaac*, (*Gen. 31. 53.*) the like we find in *Moses* and the *Israelites*, who durst not leave the bones of *Joseph* in *Egypt*; because of the Oath of the Lord, whose Name by so doing, would have been abused, *Exod. 13. 19.*

And we find the Lord rebuking his People for the breach of the fourth Commandment, *Exod. 16. 27, 28, 29.*

And for the breach of the fifth, the Curse came upon *Ham*, *Gen. 9. 25, 26, 27.* And *Ishmael* dishonouring his Father, in mocking *Isaack*, was cast out, as we read, *Gen. 21. 9, 10.* The sons in law of *Lot*, for slighting their Father, perish in the overthrow of *Sodom*, *Gen. 19. 14, &c.*

The sixth Commandment was broken by *Cain*, and so dreadful a Curse and Punishment came upon him, that it made him cry out, *My Punishment*

10 *What the Covenant of Works is,*
Punishment is greater then I can bear, Gen.
4. 13.

Again, when *Eſau* threatned to ſlay his Brother, *Rebecca* ſent him away ſaying, *Why ſhould I be deprived of you both in one day?* hinting unto us, that ſhe knew Murther was to be puniſhed with death, *Gen. 27. 54.* Which the Lord himſelf declared likewise to *Noah*, *Gen. 9. 6.*

Again, a notable Example of the Lords Juſtice in puniſhing Murther, we ſee in the *Egyptians*, and *Pharaoh*, who drowned the *Iſraelites* Children in the River, *Exod. 1. 22.* And they themſelves were drowned in the Sea, *Exod. 14. 27.*

The ſin againſt the Seventh Commandment was puniſhed in the *Sodomites*, &c. with the utter deſtruction of this City, and themſelves, *Gen. 19. 24, 25.* Yea, they ſuffer the vengeance of eternal fire, *Jude 7.* Alſo the Male *Sechemites*, for the ſin committed by *Hamors* ſon, were all put to the ſword, *Gen. 34. 25, 26.*

Our firſt Parents ſinned againſt the Eighth Commandment in taking the forbidden fruit, and ſo brought the Curſe on themſelves, and their poſterity, *Gen. 3. 16.*

Again, the puniſhment due to the breach of this Commandment, was by *Jacob* accounted death, *Gen. 31. 30, 32.* and alſo by *Jacobs* ſons, *Gen. 44. 9, 10.* *Cain*

Cain sinning against the Ninth Commandment, as in *Gen. 4. 9* was therefore cursed to the earth, verse the 11. And *Abraham*, though the Friend of God, was blamed for false witness by *Pharaoh*, and sent out of *Egypt*; *Gen. 12. 18, 19, 20.* and both he and *Sarah* reproved by *Abimelech*, *Gen. 20. 9, 10, 16.*

Pharaoh sinned against the Tenth Commandment, *Gen. 12. 15.* and was therefore plagued with great plagues, verse 17. *Abimelech*, coveted *Abraham's* Wife, and the Lord threatened death to him and his, except he restored her again; *Gen. 20. 3.* Yea, though he had not come near her, yet for coveting and taking her, the Lord fast closed up the Wombs of his house, verse 18.

I could have spoken more fully to this, but that I would not be too tedious, but speak what I have to say with as much brevity as I can. But before I pass it, I will besides this, give you an Argument or two more for the further clearing of this; that the substance of the Law delivered on Mount *Sinai*, was before that delivered by the Lord to man in the Garden. As first, Death reigned over them that had not sinned, after the similitude of *Adam's* transgression, (that is, though they did not take the forbidden fruit as *Adam* did) but had the transgression been no other, or had their sin been laid to the charge of none but those that did eat
of

12 *What the Covenant of Works is,*

of that fruit, then those that was born to *Adam*, after he was shut out of the Garden, had not had sin; in that they did not actually eat of that fruit, and so had not been slaves to death. But in that Death did reign from *Adam* to *Moses*, or from the time of his transgression against the first giving of the Law, till the time the Law was given on Mount *Sinai*, it is evident, that the substance of the Ten Commandments was given to *Adam* and his Posterity under that Command, *Eat not of the Tree that is in the midst of the Garden*. But yet if any shall say that it was because of the sin of their Father that death reigned over them: to that I shall answer, that although original sin be laid to the charge of his Posterity, yet it is also for their sins, that they actually committed, that they were plagued: And again, saith the Apostle, *For where there is no Law, there is no transgression*, Rom. 4. 15. *For sin is not imputed where there is no Law: Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses*, saith he, Rom. 5. 13, 14. But if there had been no Law, then there had been no Transgression, and so no death to follow after, as the wages thereof: for death is the wages of sin, Rom. 6. 23. and sin is the breach of the Law; an actual breach in our particular persons, as well as an actual breach in our publick person, 1 *John* 3. 4.

Again,

Again, they are no other sins then those against that Law given on *Sinai*, for the which those sins before mentioned was punished; therefore the Law given before by the Lord to *Adam* and his posterity, is the same with that afterwards given on Mount *Sinai*.

Again, the Conditions of that on *Sinai*, and of that in the Garden are all one, the one saying, *Do this and live*, the other saying the same. Also, Judgment denounced against men in both kinds alike; therefore this Law, it appeareth to be the very same, that was given on Mount *Sinai*.

Again, the Apostle speaketh but of two Covenants (to wit, Grace and Works) under which two Covenants all are; some under one, and some under the other: Now this to *Adam* is one; therefore that on *Sinai* is one; and all one with this, and that this is a truth, I say I know that the sins against that on *Sinai* was punished by God, for the breach thereof, before it was given there: so it doth plainly appear to be a truth; for it would be unrighteous with God for to punish for that Law, that was not broken: therefore it was all one with that on *Sinai*.

Now the Law given on *Sinai*, was for the more clear discovery of those sins that was before committed against it; for though the very substance of the Ten Commandments was given

14 *What the Covenant of Works is,*
even in the Garden, before they were received
from *Sinai*; yet they lay so darkly in the heart
of man, that his sins was not so clearly disco-
vered, as afterwards they were; therefore
saith the Apostle, *The Law was added*, Gal.
3. 19. (or more plainly given on *Sinai*, in
Tables of Stone) *that the offence might abound*;
that is, that it might the more clearly be made
manifest, and appear, *Rom. 5. 20.*

Again, we have a notable resemblance for
this at *Sinai*, even in giving the Law; for
first, the Law was given twice on *Sinai*:
to signifie that indeed the substance of it was gi-
ven before. And secondly, the first tables that
was given on *Sinai* was broken, at the foot of
the Mount, and the other was preserved whole:
to signifie, that though it was the true Law,
that was given before, with that given on *Si-
nai*, yet it was not so easie to be read, and to
be taken notice of, in that the stones were not
whole, but broken, and so the Law writ-
ten thereon somewhat defaced, and dis-
figured.

But if any object and say, though the
sins against the one, be the sins against the o-
ther, and so in that they do agree; yet it
doth not appear, that the same is there-
fore the same Covenant of Works with the
other.

Ans.

Answ. That which was given to *Adam* in *Paradise*, you will grant was the Covenant of Works; for it runs thus. *Do thus and live*, do it not, and die; *nay thou shalt surely die*. Now there is but one Covenant of Works: If therefore I prove, that that which was delivered on Mount *Sinai*, is the Covenant of Works, then all will be put out of doubt. Now that this is so, it is evident.

First, Consider the two Covenants, are thus called in Scripture, the one the administration of death, and the other the administration of life; the one the Covenant of Works, the other of Grace, but that delivered on *Sinai*, is called the ministration of death; that therefore is the Covenant of Works, 2 Cor. 3. *For if (saith he) the ministration of death Written and Ingraven in stones, was glorious, &c.*

Secondly, the Apostle writing to the *Galatians*, doth labour to beat them off from trusting in the Covenant of Works; but when he comes to give a discovery of that Law, or Covenant (he labouring to take them off from trusting in it) he doth plainly tell them, it is that which was given on *Sinai*, Gal. 4. 24, 25. Therefore that which was delivered in two Tables of Stone on Mount *Sinai*, is the very same that was given before to *Adam* in *Paradise*, they running both alike; that in the Garden
say-

saying, *Do this and live; but in the day thou eatest thereof, (or doest not do this) thou shalt surely die.*

And so is this on Sinai, as is evident when he saith, *The man that doth these things shall live by them*, Rom. 10. 5. and in case they break them, even any of them; it saith, *Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things, that are written in the (whole) book of the Law to do them*, Gal. 3. 10. now this being thus cleared, I shall proceed.

A second thing to be spoken too, is this, to shew what it is to be under the Law; as it is a Covenant of Works, to which I shall speak, and that thus.

To be under the Law, as it is a Covenant of Works, it is, *to be bound upon pain of eternal damnation, to fulfil and that compleatly, and continually, every particular point of the Ten Commandments, by doing them; do this, and then thou shalt live: otherwise, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all (in every particular thing) (or) things that are written in the book of the Law to do them*, Gal. 3. 10. That man that is under the first Covenant stands thus, and only thus, as he is under that Covenant, or Law. Poor souls through ignorance of the nature of that Covenant of Works, the Law, that they are under, they do not think their state to be half so bad as it is: when alas there is none in the World
in

in such a sad condition again besides themselves; for indeed they do not understand these things. He that is under the Law, as it is a Covenant of Works, is like the man that is bound by the Law of his King upon pain of Banishment, or of being Hanged, Drawn, and Quartered, not to transgress any of the Commande- of the King: So here, they that are under the Covenant of Works, they are bound upon pain of eternal banishment, and condemnation, to keep within the compass of the Law of God of Heaven. The Covenant of Works may in this case be compared to the Laws of the Medes and Persians, which being once made, cannot be altered, *Dan.* 6. 8. You find that when there was a Law made, and given forth, that none should ask a Petition of any, God or Man, but of the King only: this Law being established by the King, (*verse 9.*) *Daniel* breaking of it, let all do whatever they can, *Daniel* must into the Lions Den, *ver.* 16. So here, I say, there being a Law given, and sealed with the Truth, and the Word of God, (how, that the soul that sinneth shall die, *Ezek.* 18. 4.) whosoever doth abide under this Covenant, and dieth under the same, they must and shall into the Lions Den: nay worse then that, for they shall be thrown into Hell, to the very Devils.

But to speak in a few particulars for thy better understanding herein. Know first, that the Law of God, or Covenant of Works, doth not contain it self in one particular branch of the Law, but doth extend it self into many, even into all the *Ten Commandments*, and them Ten into very many more, as might be shewed: so that the danger doth not lie in the breaking of one or Two of these Ten only, but it doth lie even in the transgression of any one of them. As you know, if a King should give forth ten particular commands to be obeyed, by his subjects upon pain of death: now if any man doth transgress against any one of these ten, he doth commit treason, as if he had broke them all, and lieth liable to have the sentence of the Law, as certainly passed on him, as if he had broken every particular of them.

2. Again, you know that the Laws being given forth by the King, which if a man keep and obey a long time; yet if at the last he slips and breaks those Laws, he is presently apprehended, and condemned by that Law. These things are clear as touching the Law of God, as it is a Covenant of Works: if a man do fulfil nine of the Commandments, and yet breaketh but one, that being broken, will as surely destroy him, and shut him out from the joys of Heaven, as if he had actually trans-

transgressed against them all; for indeed in effect so he hath: there is a notable Scripture for this in the Epistle of *James*, 2^d Chap. at the 10th ver. *For whosoever shall keep the whole Law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all; that is, he hath in effect broken them all, and shall have the voice of them all cry out against him: and it must needs be so saith James, because, he that said (or that Law which said) Do not commit Adultery, said also, do not Kill. Now if thou commit no Adultery, yet if thou Kill, thou art become a transgressor of the Law.* As thus, it may be thou didst never make to thy self a God of Stone or Wood, or at least not to worship them so really and so openly as the Heathen do; yet if thou hast stolen, born false witness, or lusted after a Woman in thy heart, *Mat. 5. 28.* thou hast transgressed the Law; and must for certain, living and dying under that Covenant, perish for ever by the Law: for the Law hath resolved on that before-hand, saying, *Cursed is every one that continueth not in ALL things; mark, I pray you, in all things,* that's the word, and that seals the Doctrine.

3. Again, though a Man do not covet, steal, murder, worship gods of Wood and Stone, &c. yet if they do take the Lords Name in vain, they are for ever gone, living and dying under that Covenant; *Thou shalt not take the Name of the Lord thy God in vain; there is the command;*

but how if we do? then he saith, *The Lord will not hold him guiltless that taketh his Name in vain*: No, though you live as holy as ever thou canst, and walk as circumspectly as ever any did; yet if thou doest take the Lords Name in vain thou art gone by that Covenant; *For I will not, mark, I will not*, (let him be in never so much danger) *I will not hold him guiltless that takes my Name in vain*, Exod. 20. 7. and so likewise for any other of the ten, do but break them, and thy state is irrecoverable, if thou live and die under that Covenant.

4. Though thou shouldest fulfil this Covenant, or Law, even all of it, for a long time, ten, twenty, forty, fifty, or threescore years, yet if thou do chance to slip, and break one of them but once before thou die, thou art also gone and lost by that Covenant; for mark, *Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things* (that continueth not in all things, mark that) *which are written in the Book of the Law to do them*: but if a man do keep all the Law of God his whole life time, only sin one time before he dies, that one sin is a breach of the Law, and he hath not continued in doing the things contained therein; (For, for to continue according to the sense of this Scripture, is to hold on without any failing, either in thought, word, or deed) therefore I say, though a man do walk up to the Law all his life time, but only
at

at the very last sin one time before he die, he is sure to perish for ever, dying under that Covenant. For my Friends you must understand that the Law of God is (*yea*) as well as the Gospel; and as they that are under the Covenant of Grace shall surely be saved by it, so, even so, they that are under the Covenant of Works and the Law, they shall surely be damned by it, if continuing there. This is the Covenant of Works, and the nature of it; Namely, not to bate any thing, no, not a mite to him that lives and dies under it; *I tell thee* (saith Christ) *thou shalt not depart thence*, that is from under the Curse, *till thou hast paid the very last mite*, Luke 12. 59.

5. Again, you must consider, that this Law doth only condemn words and actions, as I said before; but it hath authority to condemn the most secret thought of the heart, being evil; so that if thou do not speak any word that is evil, as swearing, lying, jesting, dissembling, or any other word that tendeth to, or savoureth of sin, yet if there should chance to pass but one vain thought thorow thy heart but once in all thy life time, the Law taketh hold of it, accuseth, and also will condemn thee for it. You may see one instance for all in the fifth of *Matthew* at the 27, 28. verses, where Christ saith, That though a man do not lie with a woman carnally, yet if he do but look on her, and in his heart lust after her,

he is counted by the Law, being rightly expounded, such a one that hath committed the sin; and thereby hath laid himself under the condemnation of the Law. And so likewise of all the rest of the commands; if there be any thought that is evil, do but pass thorow thy heart, whether it be against God, or against man in the least measure, though possibly not discerned of thee, or by thee, yet the Law takes hold of thee therefore, and doth by its authority both cast, condemn, and execute thee for thy so doing. The thought of wickedness is sin, *Prov.*

6. Again, the Law is of that nature and severity, that it doth not only enquire into the generality of thy life, as touching several things, whether thou art upright there or no, but the Law doth also follow thee into all thy holy duties, and watcheth over thee there, to see whether thou doest do all things aright there; that is to say, whether when thou doest pray, thy heart hath no wandring thoughts in it; whether thou do every holy duty thou doest perfectly, without the least mixture of sin; and if it do find thee to slip, or in the least measure to fail in any holy duty that thou doest perform, the Law taketh hold on that, and findeth fault with that, so as to render all the holy duties that ever thou didst unavailable because of that: I say, if when thou art a hearing,
there

there is but one vain thought, or in praying but one vain thought, or in any other thing whatsoever, let it be civil or spiritual, one vain thought once in all thy life time, will cause the Law to take such hold on it, that for that one thing, it doth even set open all the Flood-gates of Gods wrath against thee, and irreconcilably by that Covenant, it doth bring eternal vengeance upon thee. So that I say look which ways thou wilt, and fall wherein thou wilt, and do it as seldom as ever thou canst, either in civil or spiritual things, as aforesaid; that is either in the service of God, or in thy employments in the world, as thy trade, or calling, either in buying or selling any way, in any thing whatsoever: I say, if in any particular it findeth thee tardy, or in the least measure guilty, it calleth thee an offender, it accuseth thee to God, it puts a stop to all the promises thereof, that are joyued to the Law; and leaves thee there as a cursed transgressor against God, and a destroyer of thy own soul.

Here I would have thee by the way for to take notice that it is not my intent at this time to enlarge on the several Commands in particular; for that would be very tedious both for

If thou wouldst have a more full discourse thereof. Read *Dee* upon the Commandments.

me to write, and thee to read: only thus much I would have thee to do at the reading hereof; make a pause, and sit still one quarter of an hour, and muse a little in thy mind thus with thy self, and say; Did I ever break the Law, yea or no? had I ever in all my life time one sinful thought passed thorough my heart since I was born, yea or no? and if thou findest thy self guilty, as I am sure thou canst not otherwise choose but do, unless thou shut thy eyes against thy every days practice; then I say conclude thy self guilty of the breach of the first Covenant. And when that this is done, be sure in the next place, thou do not straight-way forget it, and put it out of thy mind, that thou art condemned by the same Covenant; and then do not content thy self until thou do find, that God hath sent thee a pardon from Heaven, through the Merits of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Mediator of the second Covenant. And if God shall but give thee a heart to take this my counsel, I do make no question but these words spoken by me, will prove an instrument for the directing of thy heart, to the right remedy, for the salvation of thy soul.

Thus much now touching the Law and the severity of it, upon the person that is found under it, having offended, or broken any particular of it, either in thought, word, or action; and now before I do proceed to the next thing,

thing, I shall answer four objections that do lie in my way; and also, such as do stumble most part of the world.

The first Objection, And first, but you will say, methinks you speak very harsh; it is enough to daunt a body: for the case therefore, that a man after he hath sinned, and broken the Law, repenteth of his wickedness, and promiseth to do so no more; Will not God have mercy then, and save a poor sinner then?

1. *Answer*, I told you before, that the Covenant once broken, will execute upon the offender that which it doth threaten to lay upon him; and as for your supposing that your repenting, and promising to do so no more, may help well, and put you in a condition to attain the mercy of God by the Law: these thoughts do flow from gross ignorance, both of the nature of sin, and also of the nature of the justice of God. And if I was to give you a description, of one in a lost condition for the present, I would brand him out with such a mark of ignorance as this is.

2. *Answer*, The Law as it is a Covenant of works, doth not allow of any repentance unto life, to those that live and die under it; for the Law being once broken by thee, never speaks good unto thee, neither doth God at all regard thee; If thou be under that Covenant, notwithstanding all thy repentings; and

also promises, to do so no more. No, saith the Law, thou hast sinned; therefore I must curse thee; for it is my nature to curse, and nothing else but curse every one that doth in any point transgress against me. *Gal. 3. 10. They brake my Covenant, and I regarded them not saith the Lord, Heb. 8. Let them cry, I will not regard them; let them repent I will not regard them; they have broken my Covenant, and done that in which I delighted not; therefore by that Covenant I do curse, and not bless; damn, and not save; frown, and not smile; reject, and not embrace; charge sin, and not forgive it. They brake my Covenant, and I regarded them not. So that I say if thou break the Law, the first Covenant, and thou being found there, God looking on thee thow that, he hath no regard on thee; no pity for thee, no delight in thee.*

Object. 2. But hath not the Law promises as well as threatnings? saying, *The man that doth these things shall live, (mark, he shall live) by them, or in them.*

Ans. First, to break the Commandments, is not to keep or fulfill the same; but thou hast broken them, therefore the promise doth not belong to thee by that Covenant. Secondly, the promises that are of the Law, are conditional, and so not performed, unless there be a full and continual obedience to every particu-

lar of it, and that without the least sin. Do this, mark, ~~do this~~, and afterwards thou shalt live; but if thou break one point of it once in all thy life, thou hast not done the Law; therefore the promises following the Law do not belong unto thee, if one sin hath been committed by thee. As thus, (I will give you a plain instance) "Set the case there be a Law made by the King, that if any man speak a word against him, he must be put to death, and this must not be revoked, but must for certain be expected on the offender; though though there be a promise made to them that do not speak a word against him, that they shall have great love from him: yet this promise is nothing to the offender, he is like to have no share in it, or to be ever the better for it; but contrariwise, the Law that he hath offended must be executed on him; for his sin shutteth him out from a share of, or in the Promises.) So it is here; there is a promise made indeed, but to whom? Why, it is to none but those that live without sinning against the Law: but if thou (I say) sin one time against it in all thy lifetime, thou art gone; and not one promise belongs to thee, if thou continue under this Covenant. Methinks the Prisoners at the bar, having offended the Law (and the charge of a just Judge towards them) do much hold forth the Law, as it is a Covenant of Works,

Works, and how it deals with them that are under it. The Prisoner having offended cries out for mercy; good my Lord mercy (saith he) pray my Lord pity me; the Judge saith, What canst thou say for thy self, that Sentence of Death should not be passed upon thee? Why, nothing but this, I pray my Lord be merciful: But he answers again, Friend, the Law must take place, the Law must not be broken: The Prisoner saith, Good my Lord spare me, and I will never do so any more: The Judge notwithstanding the mans out-cries, and sad condition, must according to the tenor of the Law, pass Judgment upon him, and the Sentence of the Condemnation must be read to the Prisoner, though it makes them fall down dead to hear it, if he executes the Law, as he ought to do. And just thus it is concerning the Law of God.

Object. 3. I, but sometimes (for all your haste) the Judge doth also give some Pardons, and forgive some offenders, notwithstanding their offences, though he be a Judge.

Ans. It is not because the Law is merciful, but because there is manifested the love of the Judge, (not the love of the Law) I beseech you to mark this distinction; for if a man that hath deserved death by the Law, be notwithstanding this forgiven his offence; it is not because

cause the Law saith, spare him, but it is the love of the Judge (or Chief Magistrate) that doth set the man free from the Condemnation of the Law: But mark, here the Law of Men and the Law of God do differ; the Law of Man is not so irrevokable, but if the Supream please, he may sometimes grant a Pardon, without satisfaction given for the offence; but the Law of God is of this nature, that if the Man be found under it, and a transgressor, or one that hath transgressed against it, before that Prisoner can be released, there must be a full and compleat satisfaction given to it, either by the mans own life, or by the blood of some other man; *For without shedding of blood there is no remission*, Heb. 9. 22. that is, there is no deliverance from under the curse of the Law of God; and therefore however the Law of man may be made of none effect, sometimes by shewing mercy without giving of a full satisfaction, yet the Law of God cannot be so contented, nor at the least give way, that the person offending that, should escape the curse, and not be damned, except some one do give a full and compleat satisfaction to it for him, and bring the Prisoner into another Covenant, (to wit) the Covenant of Grace, which is more easie, and soul-refreshing, and sin-pardoning.

I say therefore, you must understand, that if there be a Law made that reaches the life, to take it away for the offence given by the offender against it; then it is clear, that if the man be spared and saved, it is not the Law that doth give the man this advantage, but it is the meer mercy of the King, either because he hath a ransom, or satisfaction some other way; or being provoked thereto out of his own love to the person whom he saveth. Now thou also having transgressed and broken the Law of God, if the Law be not executed upon thee, it is not because the Law is merciful, or can pass by the least offence done by thee, but thy deliverance comes another way: Therefore I say, however it be by the Laws of men, where they be corrupted and perverted, yet the Law of God is of that nature, that if it hath not thy own blood, or the blood of some other man (for it calls for no less) for to ransom thee from the curse of it, being due to thee for thy transgression, and to satisfy the cries, the doleful cries thereof, and ever for to present thee pure and spotless before God (notwithstanding this fiery Law) thou art gone if thou hadst a thousand souls; *For without shedding of blood there is no remission*; Heb. 9. 22. No forgiveness of the least sin against the Law.

Object. 4.

Object. But thou wilt say, I do not daily repent me of my former life, and also promise to do so no more, but now I do labour to be righteous, and to live a holy life; and now instead of being a breaker of the Law, I do labour to fulfill the same: what say you to that?

Answer. Set the case thou couldest walk like an Angel of God; set the case thou couldest fulfill the whole Law, and live from this day to thy livend, without sinning in thought, word, or deed, which is impossible: but I say, set the case it should be so, why, thy state is as bad, (if thou be under the first Covenant) as ever it was. For first, I know thou dardest not say but thou hast at one time or other sinned; and if so, then the Law hath condemned thee; and if so, then I am sure, that thou with all thy actions, and works of righteousness, canst not remove the dreadful and unresistible Curse that is already laid upon thee, by that Law which thou art under, and which thou hast sinned against, though thou livest the holiest life that any man can live in this world, being under the Law of Works, and so not under the Covenant of Grace, thou must be cut off without remedy; for thou hast sinned, though afterwards thou live never so well.

As said said no entry and : mbrasso
The reasons for this that hath been spoken, are these:

First,

First, The nature of Gods justice calls for it; that is, it calls for irrecoverable ruin on them that transgress against this Law: for justice gave it, and justice looks to have it compleatly, and continually obeyed, or else justice is resolved to take place, and execute its office; which is to punish the transgressor against it; you must understand that the justice of God is as unchangable as his love; his justice cannot change its nature, justice it is, if it be pleased, and justice it is be if it displeased. The justice of God in this place, may be compared to fire; there is a great fire made in some place, if thou do keep out of it, it is fire; if thou do fall into it thou wilt find it fire; and therefore the Apostle useth this as an Argument to stir up the *Hebrews* to stick close to Jesus Christ, lest they fell under the justice of God, by these words, *Heb. 12. 29. For our God is a consuming fire*: into which if thou fall, it is not for thee to get out again, as it is with some that fall into a material fire; no, but he that falls into this, he must lie there for ever; as it is clear where he saith, *Isa. 33. 14. Who among us can dwell with everlasting burnings, and with devouring fire?* For justice once offended, knoweth not how to shew any pitty or compassion to the offender; but runs on him like a Lion, takes him by the throat, throws him into Prison, and there he is sure to lie, and that to all eternity,

nity ; unless infinite satisfaction be given to it, which is impossible to be given by any of (us) the sons of *Adam*.

Secondly , the faithfulness of God calls for irrecoverable ruine , to be poured out on those that shall live and die under this Covenant. If thou having sinned but one sin against this Covenant , and shouldest afterwards escape damning , God must be unfaithful to himself , and to his Word , which both agree as one. First, he would be unfaithful to himself ; to himself ; that is , to his Justice , Holiness , Righteousness , Wisdom , and Power , if he should offer to stop the runnings out of his Justice , for the damning of them that have offended it. And secondly , he would be unfaithful to his Word (his written Word) and deny , disown , and break that , of which he hath said , *Luk. 16. 7. It is easier for Heaven and Earth to pass away , than for one tittle of the Law to fail* , or be made of none effect ; now if he should not according to his certain declarations therein , take vengeance on those that fall and die within the threat , and sad curses denounced , it that , his word could not be fulfilled.

Thirdly , Because otherwise he would disown the sayings of his Prophets , and gratifie the sayings of his enemies : his Prophets say he will take vengeance , his enemies say he will not ; his Prophets say he will remember

their iniquities, and recompence them into their bolom; but his enemies say they shall do well, and they *shall have peace though they walk after the imagination of their own heart*; Deut. 29. 19, 20. and be not so strict as the word commands, and do not as it saith: but let me tell thee, hadst thou a thousand souls, and each of them was worth a thousand worlds, God would set them all on a light fire; if they fall within the condemnings of his Word, and thou die without a Jesus, even the right Jesus; *for the Scriptures cannot be broken*. What dost thou think that God, Christ, Prophets, and Scriptures, will all lie for thee? and falsifie their words for thee? it will be but ill venturing thy soul upon that.

And the reasons for it are these, First, Because God is God, and Secondly, because Man is Man.

First, Because God is perfectly just, and eternally just, perfectly holy, and eternally holy, perfectly faithful, and eternally faithful; that is without any variableness or shadow of turning: but perfectly continueth the same, and can as well cease to be God, as to alter or change the nature of his God-head. And as he is thus the perfection of all perfections, he gave out his Law to be obeyed; but if any offend it, then they fall into the hands of this his eternal justice, and so must drink of his irrecoverable wrath,

wrath, which is the execution of the same justice. I say, this being thus, the Law being broken, justice takes place, and so faithfulness followeth, to see that execution be done, and also to testifie that he is true, and doth denounce his unspeakable, unsupportable, and unchangeable vengeance on the party offending.

Secondly, Because thou art not as infinite as God, but a poor created weed, that is here to day and gone to morrow; and not able to answer God in his Essence, Being, and Attributes, thou art found to fall under him, for that thy soul or body can do nothing that is infinite in such a way as to satisfie this God, which is an infinite God in all his attributes.

But to declare unto you the misery of man by this Law to purpose, I do beseech you to take notice of these following particulars, besides what hath been already spoken. First, I shall shew the danger of them by reason of the Law, as they come from *Adam*. Secondly, as they are in their own persons particularly under it.

1. First, as they come from *Adam*, they are in a sad condition; because he left them a broken Covenant: or take it thus, because they, while they were in him, did with him break that Covenant. Oh! this was the treasure that *Adam* left to his posterity, it was a

broken Covenant, insomuch that death reigned over all his Children, and doth still to this day, as they come from him, both natural and eternal death, *Rom. the 5.* It may be Drunkard, Swearer, Liar, Thief, thou dost not think of this.

2. Secondly, he did not only leave them a broken Covenant, but also made them (himself) sinners against it: he made them sinners; *By one mans disobedience many were made sinners*, *Rom 5. 19.* And this is worse than the first.

3. Thirdly, not only so; but he did deprive them of their strength, by which at first they were enabled to stand, and left them no more than dead men. Oh helpless state! Oh! how beggarly and miserable are the sons of *Adam*?

4. Fourthly, not only so; but also before he left them, he was the conduit-pipe through which the Devil did convey of his poisoned spawn and venome nature into the hearts of *Adams* sons and daughters, by which they are at this day so strongly and so violently carried away, that they flie as fast to Hell and the Devil, by reason of sin, as chaff before a mighty wind.

5. Fifthly, in a word, *Adam* led them out of their Paradise, that is one more; and put out their eyes, that is another; and left them to the leading of the Devil; O sad! Canst thou
hear

hear this, and not have thy ears to tingle and burn on thy head? Can'st thou read this and not feel this and not feel thy Conscience begin to throb and dagg? If so, surely it is because thou art either possessed with the Devil, or besides thy self. But I pass this, and come to the second thing, which is the cause of their being in a sad condition, which is by reason of their being in their Particular persons under it.

First, therefore they that are under the Law, they are in a sad condition; because they are under that which is more ready (through our infirmity) to curse than to bless; they are under that called the ministration of condemnation, *2 Cor. 3.* that is, they are under that dispensation, or administration, whose proper work is to curse, and condemn, and nothing else.

Secondly, their condition is sad, who are under the Law; because they are not only under that administration that doth condemn, but also that which doth wait an opportunity to condemn: the Law doth not wait that it might be gracious, but it doth wait to curse and condemn; 1, it came on purpose to discover sin, *Rom. 5. 20.* *The Law entred*, saith the Apostle, *that the offence might abound*; or appear indeed to be that which God doth

broken Covenant, infomuch that death reigned over all his Children, and doth still to this day, as they come from him, both natural and eternal death, *Rom. the 5.* It may be Drunkard, Swearer, Liar, Thief, thou dost not think of this.

2. Secondly, he did not only leave them a broken Covenant, but also made them (himself) sinners against it: he made them sinners; *By one mans disobedience many were made sinners*, *Rom 5. 19.* And this is worse than the first.

3. Thirdly, not only so; but he did deprive them of their strength, by which at first they were enabled to stand, and left them no more than dead men. Oh helpless state! Oh! how beggarly and miserable are the sons of *Adam*?

4. Fourthly, not only so; but also before he left them, he was the conduit-pipe through which the Devil did convey of his poisoned spawn and venome nature into the hearts of *Adams* sons and daughters, by which they are at this day so strongly and so violently carried away, that they flie as fast to Hell and the Devil, by reason of sin, as chaff before a mighty wind.

5. Fifthly, in a word, *Adam* led them out of their Paradise, that is one more; and put out their eyes, that is another; and left them to the leading of the Devil; O sad! Canst thou
hear

hear this, and not have thy ears to tingle and burn on thy head? Can'st thou read this and not feel this and not feel thy Conscience begin to throb and dagg? If so, surely it is because thou art either possessed with the Devil, or besides thy self. But I pass this, and come to the second thing, which is the cause of their being in a sad condition, which is by reason of their being in their Particular persons under it.

First, therefore they that are under the Law, they are in a sad condition; because they are under that which is more ready (through our infirmity) to curse than to bless; they are under that called the ministration of condemnation, *2 Cor. 3.* that is, they are under that dispensation, or administration, whose proper work is to curse, and condemn, and nothing else.

Secondly, their condition is sad, who are under the Law; because they are not only under that administration that doth condemn, but also that which doth wait an opportunity to condemn: the Law doth not wait that it might be gracious, but it doth wait to curse and condemn; *1,* it came on purpose to discover sin, *Rom. 5. 20.* *The Law entered,* saith the Apostle, *that the offence might abound;* or appear indeed to be that which God doth

hate ; and also to curse for that which hath been committed, as he saith, *Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things that are written in the book of the Law to do them ; Gal.*

3. 10.

Thirdly, they are in a sad condition ; because that administration they are under, that are under the Law, doth always find fault with the sinners obedience, as well as his disobedience ; (if it be not done in a right spirit, which they that are under that Covenant cannot do, by reason of their being destitute of Faith) therefore, I say, it doth controule them, saying, This was not well done ; this was done by the halves ; this was not done freely, and that was not done perfectly, and out of love to God : and hence it is that some men, notwithstanding they labour to live as holy as ever they can, according to the Law ; yet they do not live a peaceable life, but are full of condemnings, full of guilt and torment of Conscience ; finding themselves to fail here, and to fall short there, omitting this good which the Law commands, and doing that evil which the Law forbids ; but never giveth them one good word for all their pains.

Fourthly, they that are under the Law are in a sad condition ; because they are under that administration that will never be contented
with

with what is done by the sinner : if thou be under this Covenant , work as hard as thou can'st , the Law will never say , *Well done* ; never say , *My good servant* : No , but always it will be driving of thee faster , hastning of thee harder , giving of thee fresh commands , which thou must do ; and upon pain of damnation not to be left undone . Nay , it is such a Master that will curse thee , not only for thy sins , but also because thy good works were not so well done , as they ought to be .

Fifthly , they that are under this Covenant or Law , their state is very sad ; because this Law doth command impossible things of him that is under it ; and yet doth but right in it , seeing man at the first , had in *Adam* strength to stand , if he would have used it , and the Law , was given then , (as I said before) when man was in his full strength ; and therefore no inequality , if it commands the same still , seeing God that gave thee strength , did not take it away . I will give you a similitude for the clearing of it ; set the case that I give to my servant ten pounds , with this charge , lay it out for my best advantage , that I may have my own again with profit ; now if my servant contrary to my command , goeth and spends my money in a disobedient way ; is it any inequality in me to demand of my servant what I gave him at first ? nay , and though he have

nothing to pay, I may lawfully cast him into Prison, and keep him there until I have satisfaction. So here, the Law was delivered to man, at the first when he was in a possibility to have fulfilled it; now then, though man have lost his strength, yet God is just in commanding the same work to be done. I, and if they do not do the same things, I say, that are impossible for them to do, it is just with God to damn them, seeing it was they themselves that brought themselves into this condition; therefore saith the Apostle, *What things soever the Law, or Commands saith, it saith to them that are under the Law; that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God*, Rom. 3. 19. and this is thy sad condition that art under the Law, Gal.

3. 10.

But if any should object and say, but the Law doth not command impossible things of natural man.

I should answer in this case as the Apostle did in another, very much like unto it, saying, *They know not what they say, nor whereof they affirm*: For doth not the Law command thee to love the Lord thy God, with all thy soul, with all thy strength, with all thy might; &c. and can the natural man do this? *Ier. 13. 23. How can those that are accustomed to do evil, do that which is commanded in this particular?*

cular? Can the Ethiopian change his skin, or the Leopard his spots?

Doth the Law command thee to do good, and nothing but good? and that with all thy soul, heart, and delight, (which the Law as a Covenant of Works called for) and can'st thou being Carnal do that? But there is no man that hath understanding, if he should hear thee say so, but would say that thou wast either bewitched, or stark mad.

Sixthly, they that are under the Law, are in a sad condition; because, that though they follow the Law, or Covenant of Works, I say, though they follow it, it will not lead them to Heaven; no, but contrariwise, it will lead them under the Curse. *It is not possible, saith Paul, that any should be justified by the Law, (or by our following of it) for by that is the knowledge of sin, and by it we are condemned for the same, which is far from leading us to life, being the ministration of death, 2 Cor. 3. and again, Israel that followeth after the Law of righteousness, hath not attained to the Law of righteousness: wherefore? because they sought it not by faith, but by the Law, and by the Works thereof, Rom. 9. 30, 31, 32.*

Sevently, they that are under the Law, are in a sad condition; because they do not know whether ever they shall have any wages for their work or no; they shall have no assurance

rance of the pardon of their sins, neither any hopes of eternal life: but poor hearts as they are, they work for they do not know what, even like a poor Horse that works hard all day, and at night hath a dirty Stable for his pains; so thou mayest work hard all the days of thy life, and at the day of death instead of having of a glorious rest in the Kingdom of Heaven, thou mayest, nay, thou shalt have for thy sins, the damnation of thy soul and body in Hell to all eternity; for as much as I said before, that the Law, if thou sinnest, it doth not take notice of any good work done by thee; but takes its advantage to destroy and cut off thy soul for the sin thou hast committed.

Eighthly, they that are under the Law, are in a sad condition, because they are under that administration, upon whose souls God doth not smile (they dying there) for the administration that God doth smile upon his Children through, is the Covenant of Grace, they being in Jesus Christ, the Lord of life and consolation: but contrariwise to those that are under the Law; for they have his frowns, his rebukes; his threatnings, and with much severity they must be dealt withal. *For they break my Covenant, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord, Heb. 8. 9.*

Ninthly,

Ninthly, they are in a sad condition; because they are out of the faith of Christ: they that are under the Law, have not the faith of Christ in them; for that dispensation which they are under, is not the administration of faith, *The Law is not of faith*, saith the Apostle, *Gal. 3. 2.*

Tenthly, because they have not received the Spirit; for that is received *by the bearing of faith*, and not by the Law, nor the Works thereof, *Gal. 3. 2.*

Eleventhly, in a word, if thou live and die under that Covenant, Jesus Christ will neither pray for thee, neither let thee have one drop of his Blood to wash away thy sins; neither shalt thou be so much as one of the least in the Kingdom of Heaven; for all these privileges come to souls under another Covenant, as the Apostle saith, *For such are not under the Law, but under Grace*, that is, such as have a share in the benefits of Jesus Christ, or such as are brought from under the first Covenant, into the second; or from under the Law, into the Grace of Christs Gospel; without which Covenant of Grace, and being found in that, there is no soul can have the least hope of eternal life, no joy in the holy Ghost, no share in the privileges of Saints, because they are tied up from them by the limits and bonds of the Covenant of Works. For you must understand,

stand, that these two Covenants have their several bounds and limitations, for the ruling and keeping in subjection, or giving of freedom to the parties under the said Covenants: now they that are under the Law, are within the compass and the jurisdiction of that, and are bound to be in subjection to that; and living and dying under that, they must stand and fall to that, as *Paul* saith, *To his own master, he shall stand or fall.* The Covenant of Grace doth admit to those that are under it, also liberty and freedom, together with commading of subjection to the things contained in it, which I shall speak to further hereafter.

But now, that the former things may be further made to appear, that is, what the sad condition of all them that are under the Law is; as I have shewn you something of the nature of the Law, so also shall I shew, that the Law was added and given for that purpose, that it might be so with those that are out of the Covenant of Grace.

First, God did give the Law, that sin might abound, *Rom. 5. 20.* not that it should take away sin in any, but to discover the sin which is already begotten, or that may hereafter be begotten, by Lust and Satan: I say, this is one proper work of the Law to make manifest sin; it is sent to find fault with the sinner, and it doth also watch that it may so do, and it doth

doth take all advantages for the accomplishing of its work in them that give ear thereto, or do not give ear, if it have the rule over them. I say, it is like a man that is sent by his Lord to see and pry into the labours and works of other men, taking every advantage to discover their infirmities and failings, and to chide them; yea, to throw them out of the Lords favour for the same.

Secondly, Another great end why the Lord did add or give the Law, it was that no man might have any thing to lay to the charge of the Lord, for his condemning of them that do transgress against the same. You know that if a man should be had before an Officer or Judge, and there be condemned, and yet by no Law; he that condemns him, might be very well reprehended or reprov'd for passing the Judgment; yea the party himself might have better ground to plead for his liberty, than the other to plead for the condemning of him: but this shall not be so in the judgment day, but contrariwise; for then every man shall be forced to lay his hand on his mouth, and hold his tongue at the Judgment of God, when it is passed upon them; therefore saith the Apostle, *What things soever the Law saith, it saith to them that are under the Law* (that is all the commands, all the curses and threatnings that are spoken by it, are spoken
saith

saith he) *that every mouth may be stopped; mark, I beseech you, it saith, saith he, that every mouth might be stopped, and that all the world might become guilty before God, Rom. 3. 19.* So that now in case any in the judgment day, should object against the judgment of God, as those in the 25. of *Matthew* do, saying, Lord when saw we thee thus and thus? And why dost thou pass such a sad sentence of condemnation upon us? surely this is injustice and not equity: Now for the preventing of this, the Law was given; I, and that it might prevent thee to purpose, God gave it betimes, before either thy first father had sinned, or thou wast born. So that again, if there should be these Objections offered against the proceedings of the Lord in justice, and judgment, saying: Lord, why am I thus condemned, I did not know it was sin? now against these two, was the Law given, and that betimes, so that both these are answered. If the first come in and say, why am I judged? why am I damned? then will the Law come in, even all the Ten Commandments, with every one of their cries against thy soul, the first saying, he hath sinned against me, damn him; the second saying also, he hath transgressed against me, damn him; the third also saying the same, together with the 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9,

10. even all of them will discharge themselves against thy soul, it thou die under the first Covenant, saying he, or they, have transgressed against us, damn them, damn them: and I tell thee also, that these ten great guns, the Ten Commandments, will with discharging themselves in justice against thy soul, so rattle in thy conscience, that thou wilt in spight of thy teeth, be immediately put to silence, and have thy mouth stopped; and let me tell thee further, that if thou shalt appear before God, to have the Ten Commandments discharge themselves against thee, thou hadst better be tied to a tree, and have ten, yea ten thousand of the biggest pieces of Ordnance in the world, to be shot off against thee; for these could go no further, but only to kill the body; but they both body and soul to be tormented in Hell with the Devil to all eternity.

3. Again, if the second thing should be objected, saying, But Lord I did not think this had been sin, or the other had been sin; for no body told me so: then also will the giving of the Law take off that, saying, nay, but I was given to thy father *Adam* before he had sinned, or before thou wast born, and have ever since been in thy soul to convince thee of thy sins, and to controul thee for doing the thing that was not right. Did not I secretly tell

tell thee at such a time, in such a place, when thou wast doing of such a thing, with such a one, or when thou wast all alone, that this was a sin; and that God did forbid it; therefore if thou didst commit it, God would be displeased with thee for it? And when thou wast thinking to do such a thing, at such a time, did not I say, forbear, do not so? God will smite thee, and punish thee for it, if thou doest do it? And besides God did so order it, that you had me in your Houses, in your Bibles, and also you could speak and talk of me; thus pleading the truth, thou shalt be forced to confess it is so; nay, it shall be so in some sort with the very Gentiles and barbarous People, that fall far short of that light we have in these parts of the world (for saith the Apostle) *The Gentiles which have not the Law, these do by nature the things contained in the Law; these having not the Law (that is, not written as we have, yet they) are a Law unto themselves, which sheweth the works of the Law is written in their hearts*, Rom. 2. 14, 15. that is, they have the Law of works in them by nature, and therefore they shall be left without excuse; for their own consciences shall stand up for the truth of this, where he saith, *Their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts the mean while accusing, or else excusing one another*. I but when? *Why, in the day when God shall*

shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ according to my Gospel, Rom. 2. 15, 16. So this I say is another end, for which the Lord did give the Law, namely, that God might pass a sentence in righteousness, without being charged with any injustice, by those that shall fall under it, in the judgment.

4. A fourth end, why the Lord did give the Law, it was, because they that die out of Jesus Christ, might not only have their mouths stopped, but also that their persons might become guilty before God (Rom. 3. 19.) and indeed this will be the ground of silencing (as I said before) they finding themselves guilty, their consciences backing the truth of the judgment of God passed upon them, *they shall become guilty*, that is, they shall be fit vessels for the wrath of God to be poured out into, being filled with guilt, by reason of transgressions against the Commandments: thus therefore shall the parties under the first Covenant be fitted to destruction (Rom. 9. 22.) even as wood, or straw, being well dried, is fitted for the fire; and the Law was added and given, and speaks to this very end that sins might be shewn, mouths might be stopt from quarrelling: *And that all the world, mark, the world might become guilty before God,* and so be in justice for ever and ever overthrown, because of their sins.

And this will be so, for these reasons.

First, Because God hath a time to magnifie his *justice*, and *holiness*, as well as to shew his *forbearance* and *mercy*. We read in *Scripture* that his eyes are too pure to behold *iniquity*, Hab. 1. 13. and then we shall find it true. We read in *Scripture*, that he will *magnifie* the *Law*, and make it *honourable*, and then he will do it indeed.

Now because the Lord doth not strike so soon as he is provoked by *sin*, therefore *poor souls* will not know, nor regard the *Justice* of God; neither do they consider the *time* in which it must be advanced (which will be) when *men* drop under the *wraith* of God as fast as *hail* in a *mighty storm*, 1 Pet. 3. 9. Psal. 50. 21, 22. Now therefore look to it *all you* that count the *long-suffering* and *forbearance* of Gods *slackness*; and because for the present he keepeth *silence*, therefore to think that he is like unto *your selves*. No, no, but know that God hath his set time for every *purpose* of his, and in its time, it shall be advanced most marvellously, to the *everlasting astonishment* and *overthrow* of that soul, that shall be dealt withal by *Justice* and the *Law*. O! how will God advance his *Justice*? O! how will God advance his *Holiness*? First, By shewing *men* that he in *justice* cannot, will not regard *them*, because *they* have sinned: And secondly, In that his *holiness* will not give way
for

for such *unclean wretches* to abide in his sight, his eyes are so pure.

Secondly, Because God will make it appear that *he* will be as good as his word to sinners; sinners must not look to escape *always*, though they may escape a *while*, yet they shall not go for all *ado unpunished*; no, but they shall have their due to a *farthing*, when every *threatning* and *curse* shall be accomplished, and fulfilled on the head of the *transgressor*. Friend there is never an *idle word* that thou speakest, but God will account with thee for it; there is never a *lie* thou tellest, but God will reckon with thee for it; nay, there shall not pass, so much as *one passage* in all thy *life-time*, but God, the *righteous God*, will have it in the *trial* by his *Law* (if thou die under it) in the *Judgment-day*.

But you will say: But who are those that are thus under the *Law*?

Ans. Those that under the *Law*, may be branched out into three ranks of *men*: either, first such as are *grossly prophane*, or such as are *more refined*; which may be two ways, some in a *lower sort*, and some in a *more eminent way*.

First, Then they are under the *Law* as a *Covenant of Works*, who are *open prophane* and *ungodly wretches*, such as delight not only in *sin*, but also make their boast of the same,

and brag at the *thoughts* of committing of it: now as for such as these are; there is a *Scripture* in the first *Epistle* of *Paul* to *Timothy*, the 1 Chap. at the 9. and 10. verses, which is a notable one to this purpose, *The Law* (saith he) *is not made for a righteous man* (not as it is a Covenant of Works) *but for the* (unrighteous or) *lawless and disobedient; for the ungodly; and for sinners, for unholy, and prophane, for murderers of fathers; and murderers of mothers, for man-slayers, for whore-mongers, for them that defile themselves with mankind, for men-stealers, liars* (look to it liars) *for perjured persons, and* (in a word) *if there be any other thing that is not according to sound Doctrine.* These are one sort of *People* that are under the *Law*, and so under the *curse* of the same; whose due is to drink up the *brim-full Cup* of *Gods eternal vengeance*, and therefore I beseech you not to deceive your selves. For know you not that the *unrighteous shall not inherit the Kingdom of God? Neither Fornicators, nor Idolators, nor Adulterers, nor Effeminate, nor Abusers of themselves with Mankind, nor Thieves, nor Covetous, nor Drunkards, nor Revilers, nor Extortioners, shall inherit the Kingdom of Heaven, 1 Cor. 6. 9, 10.* Poor souls, you think that you may have your *sins*, your *lusts* and *pleasures*, and yet you shall do pretty well, and be let to go free in the *Judgment day*: but see what
 God

God saith of such in that 9. of Deuteronomy, at the 19. and 20. verses, Which shall bless themselves in their heart, saying, I shall have peace, I shall be saved, I shall do as well as others, in the day when God shall judge the World by Jesus Christ (but saith God) I will not spare them; no, but my anger and my jealousy shall smoke against them. How far, even to the executing all the curses that are written in the Law of God upon them: Nay, saith God, I will be even with them; For I will blot out their names from under Heaven. And indeed it must of necessity be so, because such souls are unbelievers, in their sins, and under the Law, which cannot, will not shew any favourity on them; for it is not the administration of mercy and life, but the administration of death and destruction (as you have it, 2 Cor. the 3. Chap. the 7. 9. verses) and all those, every one of them, that are open profane and scandalous wretches, are under it, and have been so ever since they came into the World to this day; and they will for certain live and die under the same dispensation, and then be damned to all eternity, if they be not converted from under that Covenant, into, and under the Covenant of Grace (of which I shall speak in its place) and yet for all this, how brag and cranck are our poor wantons, and wicked ones, in this day of forbearance, as if God would never have a reckoning with them,

54 *Who they are that are under*

as if there was no *Law*, to condemn them; as if there was no bell fire to put them into: but Oh! how will they be deceived? when they shall see *Christ* sitting upon the *Judgment-seat*, having laid aside his *priestly* and *prophetical Office*, and appearing only as a *Judge* to the *wicked*. When they shall see all the records of *Heaven* unfolded and laid open; when they shall see each *man* his name out of the *Book of Life*, and in the *Book of the Law*; when they shall see *God* in his *Majesty*, *Christ* in his *Majesty*, the *Saints* in their *Dignity*; but themselves in their *Impurity*, what will they say then? whither will they flee then? where will they leave their glory? *Isa. 10. 3. Of sad state shall be the*

Secondly, They are under the *Law*, also, who do not only so break and disobey the *Law*, but follow after the *Law*, as hard as ever they can, seeking *justification* thereby; that is, though a *man* should abstain from the *sins* against the *Law*, and labour to fulfil the *Law*, and give up himself to the *Law*, yet if he look no further than the *Law*, he is still under the *Law*; and for all his *obedience* to the *Law*, the *righteous Law of God*, he shall be destroyed by that *Law*. *Friend*, you must not understand that none but *profane persons* are under the *Law*: No, but you must understand that a *man* may be turned from a vain, loose, open, *prophane Conversation*, and *sinning* against the *Law*,

Law, to a *holy, righteous, religious life*, and yet be in the same *state*, under the same *Law*, and as sure to be *damned* as the other that are more *prophane* and *loose*. And though you may say this is very *strange*, yet I shall both say it, and prove it to be true. Read with understanding that *Scripture* in *Romans* 9. at the 30, 31. *verses*, where the *Apostle* speaking of the very same thing, saith, *But Israel which followed after the Law of righteousness*; mark, that followed after the *Law of righteousness*; they notwithstanding their earnest pursuit, or hunting after the *Law of righteousness*, fell short of the *Law of righteousness*. It signifies thus much to us, that let a man be never so earnest, so fervent, so restless, so serious, so ready, so apt and willing to follow the *Law*, and the *righteousness* thereof, if he be under that *Covenant*, he is gone, he is lost, he is deprived of eternal life; because he is not under the *ministration of life* (it he die there) read also that *Scripture*, *Gal. 3. 10*, (which saith) *For as many as are of the Works of the Law are under the Curse*; mark, they that are of the *Works of the Law*; now for to be of the *works of the Law*, it is to be of the *works of the righteousness* thereof; that is, to abstain from *sin* against the *Law*, and to do the commands thereof, as near as ever they can for their lives, or with all the might they have; and therefore I be-

seech you to consider it; for mens being ignorant of this, is the cause why so many go on, supposing they have a share in *Christ*; because they are reformed, and abstain from the *sins* against the *Law*, who when all comes to all, will be *damned* notwithstanding; because they are not brought out from under the *Covenant of Works*; and put under the *Covenant of Grace*.

Object. But (can you in very deed make these things manifestly evident from the *Word of God*) methinks to reason this is very strange, that a man should labour to walk up according to the *Law of God*, as much as ever he can, and yet that men notwithstanding this should be still under the Curse. Pray clear it.

Ans. Truly this doth seem very strange, I do know full well, to the natural man, to him that is yet in his unbelief; because he goeth by *beuiled reason*; but for my part I do know it is so, and shall labour also to convince thee of the truth of the same.

First, Then the *Law* is thus strict and severe, that if a man do *sin* but once against it, he (I say) is gone for ever by the *Law*, living and dying under that *Covenant*: If you would be satisfied, as touching the truth of this, do but read the third of the *Galations* at the 10. verse. Where it saith, *Cursed is every one* (that

(that is, not a man shall miss by that Covenant) that continueth not in all (mark, in all) things that are written in the book of the Law to do them: pray mark, here is a curse in the first place; if all things written in the Book of the Law be not done, and that continually too, that is, without any failing, or one slip, as I said before. Now there is never a one in the world, but before they did begin to yield obedience to the least command, they in their own persons did *sin* against it, by breaking of it: the *Apostle* methinks is very notable for the clearing of this in that 3 of the *Romans*, and also in the fifth, in the one he endeavours for to prove that all had *transgressed* in the first *Adam*, as he stood a common person representing both *himself* and *us* in his standing and falling, *Rom. 5. 12. Wherefore* (saith he) *as by one man sin entered into the World, and death by sin: and so death passed upon all men;* mark that, but why? *for that all have sinned*, that is, for as much as all naturally are guilty of *original sin*, the *sin* that was committed by us in *Adam*: So this is one cause why none can be justified by their obedience to the Law, because they have in their first place broken it in their first parents. But secondly, In case this should be opposed and rejected by *quarrelsome persons*, though there be no ground for it, *Paul* hath another argument to back his

58 *Who they are that are under*

his Doctrine, saying, For we have proved (already) that both Jews and Gentiles are all under sin. First, As it is written, there is none righteous, no not one. Secondly, They are all gone out of the way, they are together (mark, together) become unprofitable, there is none that doth good, no not one. Thirdly, Their throat is an open Sepulchre, with their tongues they have used deceit, the poyson of asps is under their lips. Fourthly, Their mouths are full of cursing and bitterness. Fifthly, Their feet are swift to shed blood. In a word, Destruction and misery are in their ways: And the way of peace they have not known. Now then saith he, having proved these things so clearly, the conclusion of the whole is this, That what things sever the Law saith (in both shewing of sin and cursing for the same) it saith (All) to them that are under the Law, that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God, Rom. 3. 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19. So that here I lay lieth the ground of our not being justified by the Law, even because in the first place we have sinned against it; for know this for certain, that if the Law doth take the least advantage of thee, by thy sinning against it, all that ever thou shalt afterwards hear from it, is nothing but curse, curse, curse him, For not continuing in all things that are written in the book of the Law to do them.

Secondly,

Secondly, Thou canst not be saved by this
 righteous Law of God, the first Covenant;
 because, that (together with this thy miserable
 state, by original and actual sins, before thou
 didst follow the Law, since thy turning to
 the Law, & thou hast committed several sins a-
 gainst the Law, *(In many things we offend
 all)* So that now thy righteousness to the
 Law, being mixed with sometimes the lust
 of concupiscence, fornication, covetousness,
 pride, heart-risings against God, coldness of
 affection towards him, backwardness to good
 duties, speaking idle words, having of strife
 in your hearts, and such like; I say, these
 things being thus, the righteousness of the Law
 is become too weak through this our flesh,
(Rom. 8. 3.) and so notwithstanding all our o-
 bedience to the Law, we are yet through our
 weakness under the Curse of the Law; for
 as I said before, the Law is so holy, so just,
 and so good, that it cannot allow that any fail-
 ing or slip should be done by them that look
 for life by the same. *Curse is every one that
 continueth not in every thing;* Gal. 3. 10. and
 this Paul knew full well, which made him
 throw away all his righteousness (But you will
 say that was his down-fall. *Answer,* But it was
 even that which while he calls it his own, he
 also calls it the righteousness of the Law, see
Phil. 3. 7, 8, 9, 10.) and to account it but
 dung,

dung, but as dirt on his shoes; and that, that he might be found in Christ; and so be saved by him without the deeds of the Law; *Rom. 13. 28.*

But thirdly; See the case the righteousness of the Law; which thou hast; was pure and perfect without the least flaw, or fault, without the least mixture of the least sinful thought; yet this would fall far short of presenting thee blameless in the sight of God. And that I prove by these arguments.

The first Argument is; That that which is not Christ, cannot redeem souls from the Curse. It cannot completely present them before the Lord. Now the Law is not Christ; Therefore the Moral Law, cannot (by all our obedience to it) deliver us from the curse that is due to us; *Act. 4. 12.*

The second Argument is; That that righteousness that is not the righteousness of faith (that is by believing in Jesus Christ) cannot please God. Now the righteousness of the Law as a Covenant of works is not the righteousness of faith; Therefore the righteousness of the Law as acted by us, being under that Covenant, cannot please God. The first is proved in *Heb. 11. 6.* But without faith it is impossible to please him; mark, it is impossible. The second thus; The Law is not of faith; *Gal. 3. 12.* *Rom. 10. 5, 6.* compared with

Gal.

Gal. 3. 11. But that no man is justified in the sight of the Lord by the Law, it is evident; for the just shall live by faith, and the Law is not of faith. But for the better understanding of those that are weak of apprehension, I shall prove it thus.

First, That soul that hath eternal life, he must have it by right of purchase, or redemption (Heb. 9. 22. Eph. 1. 7.) Secondly, this purchase or redemption, must be through the Blood of Christ. You have redemption through his Blood. Without shedding of blood there is no remission. Now the Law is not in a capacity to die, and so to redeem sinners by the purchase of Blood, which satisfaction justice calls for (read the same Scriptures, Heb. 9. 22.) justice calls for satisfaction, because thou hast transgressed, and sinned against it, and that must have satisfaction; therefore, all that ever thou canst do cannot bring in redemption: though thou follow the Law up to the nail-head (as I may say) because all this is not shedding of blood: for believe it, and know it for certain, that though thou hadst sinned but one sin, before thou didst turn to the Law; that one sin will murder thy soul, if it be not washed away by blood, even by the Precious Blood of Jesus Christ, that was shed when he did hang upon the Cross on Mount Calvary.

Object. But (you will say) methinks that giving

ving up you selves to live a righteous life, should make God like better on us, and so let us be saved by Christ, because we are so willing to obey his Law.

Ans. The motive that moveth God to have mercy upon sinners, is not because they are willing to follow the Law, but because he is willing to save them. *Not for thy righteousness, or for thy uprightness of heart dost thou possess the Lord,* Deut. 9. 4, 5, 6. Now understand this; if thy will to do righteousness was the first moving cause why God had mercy on thee through Christ, then it must not be freely by grace. (I say freely) but the Lord loves thee and saves thee upon free terms, having nothing before-hand to make him accept of thy soul, but only the Blood of Christ; therefore to allow of such a principle, it is to allow, that grace is to be obtained by the works of the Law, which is so gross darkness as lies in the darkeſt dungeon in Popery, and is also directly opposite to Scripture. *For we are justified freely by his grace: through the redemption that is in Christ,* not through the good that is in our selves or done by us (*Rom. 3. 24*). No, *But by faith, without;* mark that, *without the deeds of the Law,* verse 28. Again, *not of works, lest any man should boast,* Eph. 2. 9. (No, no, saith he) *Not according to our works (or righteousness) but according to his own purpose,* mark, accord-

that are under this Covenant. 63

according to his own purpose and grace which was (a free gift) given us in Christ Jesus (not lately, but) before the world began, 2 Tim.

1. 9.

Object. But you will say, then, why did God give the Law, if we cannot have salvation by following of it?

Ans. I told you before, that the Law was given for these following reasons.

First, That thou mightest be convinced by it of thy sins, and that thy sins might indeed appear very sinful unto thee; which is done by the Law these ways. First, By shewing of thee what a holy God he is that did give the Law; and secondly, By shewing thee thy vileness and wickedness, in that thou contrary to this holy God, hast transgressed against, and broken this his holy Law; therefore saith Paul, *The Law was added, that the offence might abound, Rom. 5. 20.* that is, by shewing the creature the holiness of God, and also its own vileness.

Secondly, That thou mayest know, that God will not damn thee for nothing in the Judgment day.

Thirdly, Because he would have no quarrelling at his just condemning of them at that day.

Fourthly, Because he will make thee to know that he is a holy God, and pure.

Quest.

Quest. But seeing you have spoken thus far, I wish you would do so much as to shew in some particulars, both what men have done and how far they have gone, and what they have received, being yet under this Covenant, which you call the ministration of condemnation.

Answw. This is something a difficult question, and had need be not only warily, but also home and soundly answered. The question consists of three particulars. First, What men have done. Secondly, How far men have gone. Thirdly, What they have received, and yet to be under the Law or Covenant of Works; and so in a state of condemnation.

As for the first, I have spoken something in general to that already, but for thy better understanding, I shall speak yet more particularly. First, a man hath, and may be convinced and troubled for his sins, and yet be under this Covenant, and that in a very heavy and dreadful manner; in so much that he may find the weight of them to be intolerable and too heavy for him to bear, as it was with *Cain*, *Gen. 4. 13.* *My punishment (saith he) is greater than I can bear.*

Secondly, A man living thus under a sense of his sins, may repent, and be sorry for them, and yet be under this Covenant, and yet be in a damned state, *Mat. 27. 3.* *And when he (Judas) saw what was done he repented.* Thirdly,

that are under this Covenant. 65

Thirdly, Men may not only be convinced, and also repent for their sins; but they may also desire the prayers of the Children of God for them too, and yet be under this Covenant, and Curse, *Exod. 10. 16, 17. And Pharaoh called for Moses and Aaron, and said, I have sinned; intreat the Lord your God that he may take away from me these plagues.*

Fourthly, A man may also humble himself for his offences, and disobedience against his God, and yet be under this Covenant, see *1 Kings 21. 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29.*

Fifthly, A man may make restitution unto men for the offence he hath done unto them, and yet be under this Covenant.

Sixthly, A man may do much work for God in his generation, and yet be under this first Covenant, as *Jehu*, who did do that which God bid him, *2 King. 9, 25, 26.* and yet God threatneth even *Jehu*, because, though he did do the thing that the Lord commanded him; yet he did it not from a right principle; for had he, the Lord would not have said, *Yet a little while and I will avenge the blood of Jezebel upon the house of Jehu*, *Hos. 1. 4.*

Seventhly, Men may hear, and fear the servants of the Lord, and reverence them very highly; yea, and when they hear, they may not only hear, but hear and do, and that gladly too, not one or two things, but many;

scribunt

F

mark,

mark, *many things gladly*, and yet be lost, and yet be damned (see *Mat* 6. 20.) For Herod feared John (why? not because he had any civil power over him) *but because he was a just man, and holy, and observed him, and when he heard him, he did many things; and heard him gladly*; it may be that thou thinkest, that because thou hearest such and such, therefore thou art better than thy neighbours: but know for certain that thou mayest not only hear, but thou mayest hear and do, and that not with a backward will, but *gladly*; mark, *gladly* and yet be Herod still, an enemy to the Lord Jesus still: consider this I pray you.

2. But Secondly, To the second thing, which is this, *How far may such a one go? to what may such a one attain? whither may he arrive? and yet be an undone man, under this Covenant.*

Ans. First, Such a one may be received into fellowship with the *Saints*, as they are in a visible way of walking one with another; they may walk hand in hand together (see *Mat*. 25. 1. where he saith) *The Kingdom of Heaven* (that is a visible company of professors of Christ) *is likened to ten Virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the Bridegroom, five of them were wise, and five were foolish.* These in the first place are called *Virgins*; that is, such as are clear from the pollutions of the world. Secondly, They are said to go forth; that is, from the rudiments

rudiments and traditions of men. Thirdly, They do agree to take their lamps with them; that is, to profess themselves the Servants of Jesus Christ, that wait upon him, and for him; and yet when he came, he found half of them (even them Virgins) that had Lamps, that also went forth from the pollutions of the world, and the customs of men, to be such as lost their precious souls (see verse 10.) which they should not have done, had they been under the Covenant of Grace, and so, not under the Law.

Secondly, They may attain to a great deal of honour in the said company of professors (that which may be accounted honour) in so much, that they may be put in trust with Church Affairs, and bear the bag, as *Judas* did. I speak not this to shame the Saints: but being beloved I warn them; yet I speak this on purpose, that it might (if the Lord will) knock at the door of the souls of professors, consider *Demas*.

Thirdly, They may attain to speak of the word as Ministers, and become preachers of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, in so much that the people where they dwell, may even take up a Proverb concerning them, saying, *Is he among the Prophets?* his gifts may be so rare, his tongue may be so fluent, and his matter may be so fit, that he may speak with a tongue like an Angel, and speak of the hidden mysteries, yea, of them all; mark that (1 Cor. 13. 1, 2, 3, 4.) and yet

be nothing, and yet be none of the Lords appointed ones, with the Spirit of grace savingly; but may live and die under the Curse of the Law.

Fourthly, They may go yet further; they may have the gifts of the Spirit of God, which may enable them to cast out Devils, to remove the biggest Hills or Mountains in the World; nay, thou mayest be so gifted as to prophesie of things to come, the most glorious things, even the coming of the Lord Jesus Christ to reign over all his enemies, and yet be but a *Balaam*, a wicked and a mad Prophet, see 2 *Pet.* 2. 16. *Numb.* 24. 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25.

Fifthly, they may not only stand thus for a while, for a little season; but they may stand thus *till the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ with his holy Angels*, 1, and not be discovered of the Saints till that very day. *Then all those Virgins arose* (the wise and the foolish) then, when? why, when this voice was heard, *Behold the Bridegroom cometh, go you out to meet him*, (Mat. 25. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6.) and yet was out of the Lord Jesus Christ, and yet was under the Law.

Sixthly, Nay, further, they may not only continue in a profession *till then* (supposing themselves to be under the Grace of the Gospel, when indeed they are under the Curse of the Law) but even when the *Bridegroom is come*, they may still be so confident of their state to be good, that they will even reason out the case with Christ, why they

that are under this Covenant. 69

they are not let into the Kingdom of glory, saying, *Lord, Lord, have we not eaten and drunk in thy presence? and hast not thou taught in our streets?* Nay further, *Have not we taught in thy Name? and in thy Name cast out devils:* nay not only this, but, *done many*; mark, *we have done many wonderful works*; nay further, they were so confident, that they commanded in a commanding way, saying, *Lord open to us.* See here I beseech you, how far these went, they thought they had had intimate acquaintance with Jesus Christ, they thought he could not chuse but save them, they had eat and drunk with him, sat at the table with him, received power from him; executed the same power. In thy Name *have we done thus and thus*; even wrought many wonderful works, see *Mat. 7. 22. Luke 13. 25, 26.* And yet these poor creatures was shut out of the Kingdom. O consider this (I beseech you) before it be too late, lest you say, *Lord, let us come in,* when Christ saith, thrust him out, *verse 28.* Hears you cry, *Lord open to us,* when he saith, *Depart I know you not*; lest, though you think of having joy, you have *weeping and gnashing of teeth.*

3. But Thirdly, The third thing touched in the question, was this; What may such a one receive of God, who is under the Curse of the Law?

First, They may receive an answer to their
Prayers

Prayers from God, at sometimes, for some things as they do stand in need of. I find in Scripture that God did hear these persons, that the Apostle saith was cast out, see *Gen. 21. 17. And God heard the voice of the Lad* (even of cast out Ishmael) *And the Angel of the Lord called to Hagar out of Heaven* (which was the bond woman, and under the Law, *Gal. 4. 30.*) and said unto her, *Fear not: for God hath heard the voice of the Lad where he is.* Friends, It may be you may think, because you have your prayers answered in some particular things, therefore you may suppose, that as to your eternal state, your condition is very good. But you must know that God doth hear the cry of a company of *Ishmaelites*, the sons of the Bond-Woman, who are under the Law as a Covenant of Works. I do not say he hears them as to their eternal state, but he heareth them as to several streights, that they go through in this life, & gives them ease and liberty from their trouble. Here this poor wretch was almost perished for a little water, and he cryed, and God heard him, yea, he heard him out of Heaven. Read also the *107 Psalm, 23. 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29. Psal. 106. 15. He gave them their desire, and sent leanness to their souls.*

But some may say, methinks this is yet more strange, that God should hear the Prayers, the cries of those that are under the Law, and answered them.

Ans.

Answ. I told you before, he doth not hear them as to their eternal state, but as to their temporal state; For God as their Creator hath a care of them, and causeth the sun to shine upon them, and the rain to distill upon their substance, *Mat.* 5. 45. Nay he doth give the Beasts in the field their appointed food, and doth hear the young Ravens when they cry, *Psal.* 147. 9. which are far inferiour to man. I say therefore, that God doth hear the cries of his Creatures, and doth answer them too, though not as to their eternal state; but may damn them nevertheless when they die for all that.

Secondly, They may receive promises from the mouth of the Lord. There are many that have had promises made to them by the Lord, in a most eminent manner, and yet (as I said before) are such as are cast out and called the Children of the Bond-woman (which is the Law) see *Gen.* 21. 17, 18. *And the Angel of the Lord called out of Heaven to Hagar (that was the Bond-woman) saying, fear not: for God hath heard the voice of the Lad where he is. Arise, lift up the Lad, and hold him in thine hand: FOR I WILL MAKE OF HIM: mark, there is the promise. For I will make of him (of the son of the Bond-woman) a great Nation.*

Thirdly, Nay they may go further; for they may receive another heart than they had before, and yet be under the Law. There is no man

I think, but those that do not know what they say, that will think or say, that *Saul* was under the Covenant of Grace, yet after he had talked with *Samuel*, and had turned his back to go from him, saith the Scripture; *God gave him another heart* (1 Sam. 10. 9.) *another heart*; mark that, and yet an out-cast, a rejected person, 1 Sam. 15. 26, 29. Friends, I beseech you let not these things offend you, but let them rather beget in your hearts an enquiring into the truth of your condition, and be willing to be searched to the bottom, and also, that every thing which hath not been planted by the Lords right hand, may be rejected, and that there may be a reaching after better things, even the things that will not only make thy soul think thy state is good now; but that thou mayest be able to look sin, death, hell, the curse of the Law; together with the Judge in the face with comfort, having such a real, sound, effectual work of Gods Grace in thy soul, that when thou hearest the Trumpet sound, seest the graves flie open, and the dead come creeping forth out of their holes: when thou shalt see the Judgment set, the books opened, and all the world standing before the Judgment seat; I say, that then thou mayest stand, and have that blessed sentence spoken to thy soul, *Come ye blessed of my Father, inherit the Kingdom prepared for you from before the Foundation of the World*, Mat. 25. 34.

Object.

Object. But (you wil say) for all this we cannot believe that we are under the Law; for these reasons. As first, because we have found a change in our hearts. Secondly, Because we do deny that the Covenant of Works will save any. Thirdly, Because for our parts, we judge our selves far from legal principles; for we are got up into as perfect a Gospel order, as to matter of practice and discipline in Church Affairs, as any this day in *England*, as we judge.

Ans. First, That mans belief that is grounded upon any thing done in him, or by him only, that mans belief is not grounded upon the death, burial, resurrection, ascension, and intercession of Jesus Christ; for that man that hath indeed good ground of his eternal salvation, his faith is settled upon that object which God is well pleased, or satisfied withal, which is that man that was born of *Mary*, even her first-born Son; that is, he doth apply by faith to his soul, the vertues of his death, blood, righteousness, &c. and doth look for satisfaction of soul, no where else, then from that, neither doth the soul seek to give God any satisfaction, as to justification any other ways: but doth willingly and cheerfully accept of, and embrace the vertues of Christs death, together with the rest of his things, done by himself on the Cross as a Sacrifice, and since also as a Priest, Advocate, Mediator, &c. And doth so really and effectually,
receive

receive the glories of the same, *That thereby ; mark that, thereby he is changed into the same image, from glory to glory, 2 Cor. 3. 18.* Thus in general : but yet more particular.

First, To think that your condition is good, because there is some change in you from a loose prophane life, to a more close, honest, and civil life and conversation ; I say to think this testimony sufficient for to ground the stress of thy salvation upon, is very dangerous. First, Because such a soul doth not only lay the stress of its salvation besides the man Christ Jesus that died upon the Cross : But Secondly, Because that his confidence is not grounded upon the Saviour of sinners ; but upon his turning from gross sins, to a more refined life (and it may be to the performance of some good duties) which is no Saviour : I say this is very dangerous ; therefore read it, and the Lord help you to understand it ; for unless you lay the whole stress of the salvation of your souls upon the merits of another man (namely Jesus) and that by what he did do, and is a doing without you ; for certain, as sure as God is in Heaven, your souls will perish : And this must not be notional-ly neither, as with an assenting of the understanding only : but it must be by the wonderful, invisible, invincible power of the Almighty God, working in your souls by his Spirit, such a real, saving, holy faith, that can through
the

the operation of the same Spirit by which it is wrought, lay hold on, and apply these most heavenly, most excellent, most meritorious benefits of the man Christ Jesus, not only to your heads and fancies, but to your very souls, and consciences, so effectually, that you may be able by the same faith to challenge the power, madness, malice, rage, and destroying nature, either of sin, the Law, death, the Devil, together with hell, and all other evils, throwing your souls upon the death, burial, resurrection, and intercession of that man Jesus without, *Rom.* 8, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39.

But Secondly, Do you think that there was no change in the five foolish Virgins spoken of in *Mat.* 25. 1, 2, 3. Yes, there was such a change in them very people, that the five wise ones could give them admittance of walking with them, in the most purer ways and institutions of the Gospel of Christ, and yet but foolish; nay, they walked with them, or shall walk with them, until the Lord Jesus Christ shall break down from Heaven; and yet but foolish Virgins, and yet but under the Law; and so under the Curse, as I said before.

Object. But (say you) we have disowned the Covenant of Works, and turned from that also.

Answer. This is sooner said than done: Alas, alas, poor souls think because they can say *grace, grace*, it is freely by grace; therefore they are under

under the Covenant of Grace. A very wide mistake; you must understand thus much, that though you be such as can speak of the Grace of the Gospel, yet if you your selves be not brought under the very Covenant of Grace, you are yet notwithstanding your talk and profession, very far wide, of a *sense*, and of a *share* in the Covenant of the Grace of God, held forth in the Gospel.

The Jews were men of a clearer understanding many of them, then to conclude that the Law, and only the Law, was the way to salvation; for they, even they that received not the Christ of God, did expect a Saviour should come, *John* 7. 27, 41, 42, 43. but they were men that had not that Gospel Spirit, which alone is able to lead them to the very life, marrow, or substance of the Gospel in right terms; and so being muddy in their understandings, being between the thoughts of a Saviour, and the thoughts of the Works of the Law, thinking that they must be accomplished for the obtaining of a Saviour, and his mercy towards them; I say, between these, they fell short of a Saviour. As many poor souls in these days; they think they must be saved alone by the Saviour: yet they think there is something to be done on their parts, for the obtaining of the good will of the Saviour: as their humiliation for sin, their turning from the same, their promises and vows, and

that are under this Covenant. 77

and resolutions to become a new man, joyn in Church-fellowship; and what not; and thus they bringing this along with them, as a means to help them, they fall short of eternal salvation, if they convert not; see that Scripture, *Rom. 9. 30, 31, 32.* The Apostle saith there, that they that sought not did obtain, when they that did seek fell short. *What shall we say then,* saith he, *that the Gentiles which sought not after righteousness, have attained to righteousness (yea) even the righteousness of faith;* and what else? Why, *But Israel which followed after the Law of righteousness, have not attained to the Law of righteousness;* how came that to pass? *because (saith he) they sought it not by faith, but as it were;* mark, he doth not say altogether: no, *but it were,* that is, because as they sought, they did a little by the by lean upon the Works of the Law. And let me tell you, that this is such a hard thing to beat men off of, that though Paul himself did take the work in hand, he did find enough to do, touching it; How is he faint to labour in the ten first Chapters of his Epistle to the *Romans*, for the establishing of those that did even profess largely in the Doctrine of Grace? And also in that Epistle to the *Galatians*, and yet lost many, do what he could. Now the reason why the Doctrine of Grace doth so hardly down (even with professors) in truth, effectually; it is because there is a principle naturally

rally in man, that doth argue against the same, and that thus: why? saith the soul, I am a *sinner*, and God is *righteous, holy, and just*; his holy Law therefore having been broken by *me*, I must by all means, if ever I look to be saved; In the first place be sorry for my sins. Secondly, Turn from the same. Thirdly, Follow after good duties, and practise the good things of the Law, and ordinances of the Gospel, and so hope that God for Christs sake may forgive all my sins; which is not the way to God, as a Father in Christ, but the way, the very way to come to God by the Covenant of Works or the Law, which things I shall more fully clear, when I speak to the second doctrine.

Again therefore, those that this day profess the Gospel, for the generality of them, they are such that notwithstanding their profession, they are very ignorant of that glorious influence, and lustre of the same; I say, they are ignorant of the vertue and efficacy of the glorious things of Christ held forth by and in the Gospel; 2 Cor. 4. 3. which doth argue their not being under the Covenant of Grace, but rather under the Law or old Covenant. As for instance, If you do come among some professors of the Gospel, in general, you shall have them pretty busie, and ripe; also able to hold you in a very large discourse in several points of the same glorious Gospel; but if you come to the same people,
and

and ask them concerning heart-work, or what work the Gospel hath wrought on them, and what appearance they have had of the sweet influences and virtues on their souls and consciences; it may be they will give you such an answer as this: I do find by the preaching thereof, that I am changed, and turned from my *sins* in a good measure, and also have learned

* to distinguish between the Law and the Gospel, so that for the one, that

** But only
in tongue.*

is, for the Gospel I can plead, and also can shew the weakness, and unprofitableness of the other; and thus far it is like they may go, which is not far enough to prove them under the Covenant of Grace, though they may have their tongues so largely upt with the *profession* of the same, see 2 Pet. 2. 20. where he saith, *For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world, through the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, (which was not a saving knowledge) they are again intangled therein and overcome, the latter end of that man is worse than his beginning.* See also Mar. 25. 1, 2, 3, 4, &c. and also Mar. 7. 22.

Object. But (you will say) is not this a fair declaring of the Work of Grace, or doth it not discover that without all gain-saying, we are under the Covenant of Grace, when we are able, not only to speak of the glorious Gospel of Jesus Christ; but also to tell, and that by experience, that we have been changed from worse to better,
from

from sin to a holy life by leaving of the same, and that by hearing of the Word preached.

Ans. A man may in the first place be able to talk of all the *mysteries* of the *Gospel*, and that like an *Angel* of God, and yet be no more in Gods account, than the *sounding* of a *Drum*, *Brass*, or the tinkling of a *Cimball*, which are things that notwithstanding their sound and great noise, are absolutely void of life and motion; and so are accounted with God as nothing, that is, no *Christians*, no *Believers*, not under the *Covenant* of *Grace* for all that. See *1 Cor.* *13.* *1, 2, 3, 4.*

Secondly, Men may not only do this, but may also be changed in reality for a season, from what they formerly were, and yet be nothing at all in the Lords account, as to an eternal blessing. Read (*2 Pet.* *2.* *20.*) the Scripture which I mentioned before; for indeed that one Scripture is enough to prove all that I desire to say, as to this very thing; for if you observe, there is enfolded therein, these following things; first, that reprobates may attain to a knowledge of Christ. Secondly, This knowledge may be of such weight and force, that for the present, it may make them escape the pollutions of the world, and this by hearing the Gospel. For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world, through the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ; they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the last

that are under this Covenant. 81

end of that man is worse than his beginning. Now that they are Reprobates;

** Dogs or Sows. Read further. But (saith he) it is happened to them according to the true proverb; the Dog is turned to his own vomit again, and the Sow, that was washed to her wallowing in the mire, verse 21. 22.*

** Some professors take them at the best, they are but like Dogs, spitting out their filth for a time.*

But (say you) our practices in the worship of God shall testify for us, that we are not under the Law; for we have by Gods goodness attained to as exact a way of walking in the ordinances of God, and as near the examples of the Apostles, as ever any Churches since the primitive time, as we judge.

The last part of the Objection.

Ans. What then? do you think that the walking in the order of the Churches of old, as to matter of outward worship, is sufficient to clear you of your sins at the judgment day? or do you think that God will be contented with a little bodily subjection to that which shall vanish, and fade like a flower, when the Lord shall come from Heaven in flaming fire, with his mighty Angels, 2. Thes. 1. 7, 8. Alas, alas, how will such professors as these are, fall before the Judgment-seat of Christ? then such a question as this, Friend, how camest thou in hither, not having on thy wedding garment?

ment? will make them be speechless, and fall down into everlasting burnings, thousands on a heap; for you must know, that it is not then your crying Lord, Lord, that will stand you in stead, nor your saying, We have eat and drunk in thy presence, that will keep you from standing on the left hand of Christ.

It is the principle as well as the practice, that shall be enquired into at that day.

Quest. The principle (you will say) what do you mean by that?

Ans. My meaning is, the Lord Jesus Christ will then enquire and examine, whether the Spirit from which you acted, was Legal, or Evangelical; that is, whether it was the spirit of adoption, that did draw you out to the thing you took in hand, or a meer moral principle, together with some shallow and common illuminations into the outward way of the Worship of God, according to Gospel rule.

Quest. But (you will say its like) how should this be made manifest, and appear?

Ans. I shall speak briefly in answer hereunto, as followeth. First then, that man that doth take up any of the ordinances of God, namely, as Prayer, Baptism, breaking of Bread, Reading, Hearing, Alms-deeds, or the like; I say, he that doth practice any of these or such like, supposing thereby to procure the love of Christ to his own soul; he doth

do

that are under this Covenant. 83

do what he doth from a Legal, and not from an Evangelical, or Gospel Spirit, as thus; for a man to suppose that God will hear him, for his Prayers sake, for his Alms-sake, for his Humiliation sake, or because he hath promised to make God attend hereafter, whereas there is no such thing as a satisfaction to be made to God by our Prayers, or whatever we can do; I say, there is no such way to have reconciliation with God in. And so also, for men to think, because they are got into such and such an Ordinance, and have crowded themselves into such and such a Society, that therefore they have got pretty good shelter from the wrath of the Almighty; when alas poor souls there is no such thing; No, but God will so set his face against such professors, that his very looks will make them to tear their very flesh; yea, make them to wish, would they had the biggest Mill-stone in the world hanged about their necks, and they cast into the midst of the Sea. For friends, let me tell you, though you can now content your selves, without the holy, harmless, undefiled, perfect righteousness of Christ; yet there is a day a coming, in which there is not one of you shall be saved; but those that are, and shall be found clothed with that righteousness. God will say to ~~ALL~~ the rest, *Take them, bind them hand and foot, and cast them into outer darkness;*

darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth (Mat. 22. 13.) for Christ will not say unto men in that day, Come, which of you made a *profession* of me, and walked in *Church-fellowship* with my Saints? no, but then it shall be enquired into, who hath the reality of the truth of grace wrought in their *hearts*: and for certain, he that misleth of that, shall surely be cast into the lake of fire; there to burn with the devils and damned men and women; there to undergo the wrath of the eternal God, and that not for a day, a month, a year; but for ever, for ever, for ever, and ever, there is that which cutteth to the quick; therefore look to it, and consider now what you do, and whereon you hang your souls; for it is not every pin that will hold in the judgment, nor every foundation that will be able to hold up the house against those, mighty, terrible, soul-drowning floods, and destroying tempests, which then will roar against the soul and body of a sinner (*Luke* the 6. the three last verses) and if the principle be rotten, all will fall, all will come to nothing. Now the principle is this, not to do things because we would be saved, but to do them from this, namely, because we do really believe that we are and shall be saved; but do not mistake me, I do not say we should slight any holy duties (*God* forbid) but I say, he that doth look for life because he doth

doth do good duties, he is under the Covenant of Works the Law: let his duties be never so eminent, so often, so fervens, so zealous. I, and I say, as I said before, that if any man or men, or multitudes of people, do get into never so high, so eminent, and clear practices, and Gospel-order, as to Church-discipline, if it be done to this end I have been speaking, from this principle; they must and shall have these sad things fall to their share, which I have made mention of.

Ques. But (you will say) can a man use Gospel-ordinances with a Legal spirit.

Ans. Yes as easily as the Jews could use and practice circumcision, though not the Moral, or Ten Commandments. For this I shall be bold to affirm, that it is not the Commands of the New Testament administration, that can keep a man from using of its self in a legal spirit; for know this for certain, that it is the principle, not the command, that makes the subjecter to the same, either Legal or Evangelical, and so his obedience from that command to be from Legal convictions, or Evangelical principles.

Now herein the devil is wondrous subtle and crafty, in suffering people to practice the ordinances and commands of the Gospel, if they do but do them in a Legal spirit,

* from a spirit of works; for he knows then, that if he can but get the soul to go on, in such a spirit, though they do never so many duties, he shall hold them sure enough; for he knows full well, that thereby they do set up something in the room of, or at the least to have some (though but

** I beseech you, do not think that because I say this therefore I am against the Ordinances of the Gospel: for I do honour them in their places: yet would not that any of them should be idolized, or set in a wrong spirit.*

a little) share with the Lord Jesus Christ in their salvation; and if he can but get thee here, he knows that he shall cause thee by thy depending a little upon the one, and so thy whole dependance being not upon the other (that is Christ, and taking of him upon his own terms) thou wilt fall short of life by Christ, though thou do very much by thyself, in a faine walking, in an outward conformity to the several commands of the Lord Jesus Christ. And let me tell you plainly, that I do verily believe, that as Satan by his Instruments did draw many of the Galatians by Circumcision (though, I say, it was none of the commands of the moral Law) to be debtors to do upon pain of eternal damnation, the whole of the moral Law: So also Satan in the time of the Gospel, doth use even the commands laid down in the Gospel (some of them)

to bind the soul over to do the same Law; the thing being done and walked in, by, and in the same spirit: For as I said before, it is not the obedience to the command, that makes the subjecter thereto Evangelical, or of a *Gospel Spirit*; but contrariwise, the principle that leads out the soul to the doing of the command, that makes the persons that do thus practice any command, together with the command by them practised, either Legal or Evangelical.

As for instance, prayer it is a *Gospel command*; yet if he that prayes, doth it in a Legal spirit, he doth make that which in it self, is a *Gospel command*, an occasion of leading him into a Covenant of Works, in as much as he doth it by, and in that old Covenant spirit.

Again, giving of *Alms*, is a *Gospel command*; yet if I do give *Alms* from a Legal principle, the command to me is not *Gospel* but *Legal*, and it binds me over (as aforesaid) to do the whole Law. For he is not a *Jew* (not a Christian) that is one outwardly, that is one, only by an outward subjection to the ordinances of prayer, hearing, reading, baptism, breaking of bread, &c. But he is a *Jew* (a Christian) which is one inwardly, who is rightly principled, and practiseth the ordinances of the Lord from the leadings forth of the spirit of the Lord from a true and saving faith in the Lord; *Rom. 2. 28, 29.*

Those men spoken of in the 7. of *Matthew*, for certain, for all their great declaration, did not do what they did from a *right Gospel Spirit*; for had they, no question but the Lord would have said, *Well done good and faithful servants*: but in that the Lord Jesus doth turn them away into Hell, notwithstanding their great profession of the Lord, and of their doing in his name, it is evident that notwithstanding all that they did do, they were still under the Law, and not under that Covenant as true *believers* are (to wit) the Covenant of Grace, and if so, then all their duties that they did, of which they boasted before the Lord, was not in, and by a right *Evangelical principle* (or *Spirit*).

Again, saith the Apostle, *Whatsoever is not of faith is sin*, Rom. 14. 23. but there are some that do even practise baptism, breaking of bread, together with other ordinances, and yet are unbelievers; therefore unbelievers doing these things, they are not done in faith, but sin: now to do these things in sin, or without the faith, it is not to do things in an *Evangelical* or *Gospel Spirit*; also they that do these things in a *Legal spirit* the very practising of them, renders them not under the Law of Christ, as head of his Church but the works they do are of so much contradiction to the *Gospel of God*, or the *Covenant of Grace*, that they that do them thus, do even set up against the

the

the Covenant of Grace ; and the very performance of them is of such force that it is sufficient to drown them that are subjecters thereunto, even under the Covenant of Works ; but this poor souls are not aware of, and there is their misery.

Quest. But have you no other way to discover the things of the Gospel, how they are done with a *Legal principle*, but those you have already made mention of ?

Ans. That thou mightest be indeed satisfied herein, I shall shew you the very manner and way that a *Legal*, or old Covenant converted professor (bear with the terms) doth take, both in the beginning, middle, and the end of his doing of any duty or command, or whatsoever it be that he doth do.

First, He thinking this or that to be his duty, and considering of the same, he is also presently persuaded in his own conscience, that God will not accept of him, if he leave it undone ; he seeing that he is short of his duty (as he supposeth while this is undone by him, and also judging that God is angry with him, until the thing be done. he in the second place sets to the doing of the duty, to the end he may be able to pacifie his conscience by doing of the same, persuading of himself that now the Lord is pleased with him for doing of it. Thirdly, Having done it, he contents himself, sits down at his ease untill some further convictions of his duty

duty to be done, which when he seeth and knoweth, he doth do it as aforesaid, from the same principle as he did the former, and so goeth on in his progress of profession. This is to do things from a *Legal principle*, and from an old *Covenant spirit*; for thus runs that *Covenant*, *The man that doth these things shall live in them, or by them*, Levit. 18. 5. Ezek. 20. 11. Gal. 3. 12. Rom. 10. 5. but more of this in the use of this *Doctrine*.

Object. But (you will say) by these words of yours, you do seem to deny that there are *conditional promises* in the *Gospel* as is clear, in that you strike at such *practices* as are *conditional*, and commanded to be done upon the same.

Ans. The thing that I strike at is this; that a man in, or, with a *legal spirit*, should not, nay cannot, do any *conditional command* of the *Gospel* acceptable, as to his *eternal state*; because he doth it in an old *Covenant spirit*. *No man putteth new Wine into old Bottles: but new Wine must have new Bottles; a Gospel command must have a Gospel spirit, or else the Wine will break the Bottles, or the principle will break the command.*

Object. Then you do grant that there are *conditional promises* in the *New Testament*, as in the *moral Law*, or *ten Commands*.

Ans. Though this be true; yet the *conditional promises* in the *New Testament*, do not call

that are under this Covenant. 93

call so the similitude in the same state of our right
moracy to fulfill them, upon the same condition.
¶ The Law, and the Gospel being two distinct
Covenants; yet they are made in divers ways; and
the nature of the conditions also being not the
same as in the Apostle; The righteousness
of the Law is to be wrought, and the righteousness
of Faith is to be wrought. ¶ Rom. 13. 10. that
is, the great condition in the Law is, If you do
these things, you shall live by them: but the con-
dition, even the greatest condition, which doth
for a poor soul to do, as to salvation (for) it is
that we speak of) is to believe; that my sins
be forgiven me for Jesus Christ sake, without
the works or righteousness of the Law; on the
right part, to help forward, Rom. 4. 5. To him
that worketh not (such the Apostle) (for salva-
tion) but believeth on him who justifieth the un-
godly, his faith is counted for
righteousness: So that we (such he) conclude,
that a man is justified by faith without works
again, without the deeds of the Law. Rom. 3. 28.
¶ But again; there is never a condition in the
Gospel; that can be fulfilled by an unbeliever;
and therefore, whether there be a condition, or
whether there be none, it makes no matter
to thee, who art without the Faith of Christ;
for it is impossible for thee in that state to do
them, so as to be ever the better; as is thy
eternal state; therefore lest thou shouldst
be deceived, thou art to be warned, that thou art

thy soul upon the *conditions* laid down in the Gospel, as thou wilt do, if thou go about to do them, only with a *Legal spirit*: but I say, to prevent this, see if thou canst fulfill the first condition; that is, to believe that all thy sins are forgiven thee; not for any condition that hath been, or can be done by thee, but merely for the mans sake, that did hang on Mount Calvary, between two Thieves, some sixteen hundred years ago and odd: And I say, see if thou canst believe that at that time, he did (when he hanged on the Cross) give full satisfaction for all thy sins, before thou in thy person hadst committed ever a one: I say, see if thou canst believe this, and take heed thou deceive not thy self with an historical, notional, or traditional acknowledgement of the same. And Secondly, See if thou canst so well fulfill this condition, that the very *virtue* and *efficacy* that it hath on thy soul, will ingage thee to fulfill those other conditions; really in love to that man, whom thou shouldest believe, hath frankly, and freely forgiven thee all, without any condition acted by thee, to move him thereto, according to that saying in the 2 Cor. 5. 14. 15. and then thy doing will arise from a contrary principle, than otherwise it will do; that is, then thou wilt not act, and do because thou wouldst be accepted of God; but because thou hast some good hope in thy heart, that thou art accepted of him already, and not
on

on thine, but wholly and alone upon another mans account; for here runs the Gospel Spirit of Faith; mark, *We believe and therefore speak*; So we believe, and therefore do. 2 Cor. 4. 13. *Take heed therefore that you do not, that you may believe; but rather believe so effectually, that you may do.*, even all that Jesus doth require of you from a right principle, even out of love to your dear Lord Jesus Christ, which thing I shall speak to more fully by and by.

Obiect. But what do you mean by those expressions, *Do not do that you may believe, but believe so effectually that you may do.*

Answ. When I say, do not do that you may believe; I mean, do not think that any of the things that thou canst do, will procure, or purchase faith from God unto thy soul; for that is still the old Covenant Spirit, the Spirit of the Law, to think to have it for thy doing. They that are saved, they are saved by Grace, through faith, and that not of themselves; not for any thing that they can do, for they are both the free gift of God, Eph. 2. 8. *Not of (doing, or of) works, lest any man should (be proud, and) boast* verse 9. Now some people be so ignorant, as to think that God will give them Christ, and so all the merits of his, if they will be but vigilant, and do something to please God, that they may obtain him at his hands; but let me tell them they may lose

Tole a thousand souls quickly, if they had so many, by going this way to work; and yet be never the better; for the Lord doth not give his Christ to us, upon such conditions; but he doth give him freely: that is, without having respect to any thing that is in thee, Rev. 22. 17. *Iſa.* 55. 1, 2. *To him that is a thirst will I give;* he doth not say *I will sell;* but *I will give him the water of life freely,* Rev. 21. 6.

For if Christ doth give it, and that freely, then he doth not sell it for any thing that is in the creature; but Christ doth give himself, as also doth his Father, and that freely; not because there is any thing in us, or done by us, that moves him thereunto. If it were by doing, then saith Paul, *Grace is not Grace,* seeing it is obtained by works; but *Grace is Grace,* and that is the reason it is given to men without their works, *Rom. 11. 6. And if it be by Grace,* that is, if it be a free gift from God, without any thing foreseen, as done, or to be done by the creature, *then it is not of works,* which is clear: therefore it is grace without the works of the Law; but if you say nay, it is of something in the man, done by him, that moves God thereunto; then you must conclude, that either *Grace is no Grace,* or else that *Works are Grace,* and not *Works.* Do but read with understanding, *Rom. 11. 6.*

Now

that are under this Covenant. 99

Now before I go any further, it may be necessary to speak a word or two to some *poor souls* that are willing to close in with *Jesus Christ*, and would willingly take him upon his own terms, only they being muddy in their minds, and have not yet attained the understanding of the terms and conditions of the two *Covenants*, they are kept off from closing with Christ; and all is, because they see they can do nothing. As for example, come to some *souls*, and ask them how they do, they will tell you presently, that they are so bad that it is not to be expressed: If you bid them believe in *Jesus Christ*, they will answer, that they cannot believe; if you ask them why they cannot believe; they will answer, because their hearts are so hard, so dead, so dull, so backward to good duties; and if their hearts were but better, if they were more earnest, if they could pray better, and keep their hearts more from running after sin, then they could believe; but should they believe with such vile hearts, and presume to believe in Christ, and be so filthy: Now all this is, because the *Spirit* of the *Law* still ruleth in such a soul, and blinds them so that they cannot see the terms of the Gospel. To clear this, take the substance of the drift of this poor soul, which is this: If I was better than I think I could believe, but being so bad as I am, that is the reason that I cannot;

cannot; this is just to do something that I may believe, to work that I may have Christ, to do the Law that I may have the Gospel; or thus to be righteous that I may come to Christ. O man! thou must go quite back again; thou must believe, because thou canst not pray, because thou canst not do; thou must believe, because there is nothing in thee (naturally) that is good, or desireth after good, or else thou wilt never come to Christ as a sinner; and if so, then Christ will not receive thee; and if so, then thou mayest see that to keep off from Christ, because thou canst not do, is to keep from Christ by the Law, and to stand off from him because thou canst not buy him. Thus having spoken something by the way, for the direction of those souls that would come to Christ, I shall return to the former discourse wherein ariseth this objection.

Object. But you did but even now put souls upon fulfilling the first condition of the Gospel, even to believe in Christ, and so be saved; but now you say, it is alone by Grace, without condition; and therefore by these words, there is first a contradiction to your former sayings, and also that men may be saved without the condition of faith, which to me seems a very strange thing. I desire therefore that you would clear out what you have said, as to my satisfaction.

Ans.

Answ. Though there be a *condition* commanded in the *Gospel*, yet he that commands the *condition*, doth not leave his *children* to their own natural *abilities*, that in their own *strength* they should fulfill them (as the *Law* doth) but the same *God* that doth command that the *condition* be fulfilled, even he, doth help his *children* by his *holy Spirit*, to fulfill the same condition, For it is *God* that worketh in you, mark, in you (believers) both to will and to do, of his own good pleasure, Phil. 2. 13. Thou hast wrought all our works in us, and for us, Isa. 26. 12. So that the *condition* be fulfilled, it is not done in the ability of the creature.

But Secondly, Faith as it is a gift of *God*, or an act of ours, take it which way you will; If we speak properly of *salvation*, it is not the first, nor the second cause of our *salvation*; but the third, and that but instrumentally neither; that is, it only layeth hold of, and applieth to us that which saveth us, which is the love of *God*, through the merits of *Christ*, which are the two main causes of our *salvation*, without which all other things are nothing, whether it be *faith*, *hope*, *love*, or whatever can be done by us. And to this, the great *Apostle* of the *Gentiles* speaks fully; for faith he, *God* who is rich in *mercy* loved us, even when we were dead in our *sins*, Eph. 2. 4. (that is, when we were without faith) and that was

the cause why we believe; for he thereby hath quickned us together, through the meritorious cause, which is *Christ*, and so hath saved us by *Grace*, that is, of his own voluntary love and good will; the effects of which was this, he gave us *faith* to believe in *Christ*, read soberly that second of the *Ephesians*, at the 4, 5, 6, 7, 8 verses. *Faith* as the gift of God is not the Saviour, as our act doth merit nothing. *Faith* was not the cause that God gave *Christ* at the first, neither is it the cause why God converts men to *Christ*: but *faith* is a gift bestowed upon us, by the gracious God, the nature of which is to lay hold on *Christ*, that God afore did give for a Ransom, to redeem sinners; this *faith* hath its nourishment, and supplies from the same God, that at the first did give it; and is the only instrument, through the *Spirit*, that doth keep the *soul* in a comfortable frame, both to do and suffer for *Christ*; helps the *soul* to receive comfort from *Christ*, when it can get none from it self, beareth up the *soul* in its progress heaven-wards: but that it is the first cause of *salvation*, that I deny; or that it is the second, I deny: but is only the instrument, or hand, that receiveth the benefits that God hath prepared for thee before thou hadst any *faith*: so that we do nothing for *salvation*, as we are men. But if we speak properly, it was Gods Grace that moved him to give *Christ*

that are under this Covenant. 99

Christ a Ransom for sinners, and the same God with the same Grace, that doth give to the soul faith to believe, and so by believing to close in with him, whom God out of his love and pity, did send into the world to save sinners; so that all the works of the creature are shut out, as to justification and life, and men are saved freely by Grace. I shall speak no more here, but in my discourse upon the second Covenant, I shall answer a hell-bred Objection or two, to forewarn sinners, how they turn the Grace of God into wantonness.

And thus you see I have briefly spoken to you something touching the Law. First, What it is, and when given. Secondly, How sad those mens conditions are that are under it. Thirdly, Who they are that be under it. Fourthly, How far they may go, and what they may do, and receive, and yet be under it, which hath been done by way of answers to several questions, for the better satisfaction of those that may stand in doubt of the truth of what hath been delivered.

Now in the next place, I should come to some application of the truth of that which hath been spoken; but I shall in the first place speak something to the second Doctrine, and then afterwards I shall speak something by way of Use and Application to this first Doctrine.

The second Doctrine now to be spoken to, is to shew, that the People of God are not under the Law but under Grace.

For ye are not under the Law but under Grace, Rom. 6. 14.

YOU may well remember that from these words, I did observe these two great truths of the Lord. First, That there are some in Gospel times, that are under the Law, or Covenant of Works.

Secondly, That there is never a believer under the Law (or Covenant of works) but under Grace.

I have spoken something to the former of these truths (to wit) that there are some under the Law, together with who they are, and what their condition is, that are under it. Now I am to speak to the second, and to shew you who they are, and what their condition is, that are under that.

But

But before I come to that, I shall speak a few words, to shew you what the word *GRACE* in this place signifies; for the word *Grace* in the *Scripture* referreth sometimes to favour with men; (*Esther* 2. 7. *Gen.* 39. 4. *Chap.* 50. 4, 33, 10.) sometimes to holy qualifications of Saints (2 *Cor.* 8. 7.) and sometimes to hold forth the condescension of Christ, in coming down from the glory which he had with his Father, before the world was, to be made of no reputation, and a servant to men (2 *Cor.* 8. 9. *Phil.* 2. 7.) Again, sometime it is taken for the free, rich, and unchangeable love of God to man, through Jesus Christ; that for our cause and sakes, did make himself poor: and so it is to be understood in these words, *For you are not under the Law* (to be cursed, and damned, and sent headlong to hell) *but (you are) under Grace*, to be saved, to be pardoned, to be preserved, *and kept by the mighty power of God, through faith* (which alone is the gift of Grace) *unto eternal glory.* This one *Scripture* alone proves the same, *Eph.* 2. 8. *For by Grace you are saved*, by free grace, by rich grace, by unchangeable grace. And you are saved from the curse of the Law, from the power, guilt, and filth of sin, from the power, malice, madness, and rage of the devil, from the wishes, curses, and desires of wicked men, from the

I touched upon this in the first Doctrine.

hot, scalding, flaming, fiery furnace of hell, from being arraigned, as malefactors, convicted, judged, condemned, and fettered with the chains of our sins to the devils, to all eternity; and all this freely, freely by his grace (*Rom. 3. 24.*) by rich grace, unchargable grace; for saith he, *I am God, and change not: therefore ye sons of Jacob are not consumed*, *Mal. 3. 6.* This is grace indeed.

The word [G R A C E] therefore in this Scripture (*Rom. 6. 14.*) is to be understood of the free love of God in Christ to sinners, by virtue of the new Covenant, in delivering them from the power of sin, from the curse and condemning power of the Old Covenant, from the destroying nature of sin, by its continual workings; as is all evident, if you read with understanding the words as they lie, *For* (saith he) *sin shall not have dominion over you, or it shall not domineer, reign, or destroy you, though you have transgressed against the Covenant of works (the Law) and the reason is rendered in these words, For ye are not under the Law, that is, under that which accuseth, chargeth, condemneth, and brings execution on the soul for sin. But, under Grace; that is, under that which frees you, forgives you, keeps you, and justifies you from all your sins, adversaries, or whatever may come in to lay any thing to your charge, to damn you. For that*

is truly called grace in this sense , that doth set a man free from all his sins , deliver him from all the curses of the Law , and what else can be laid to his charge , freely without any foresight in God to look at what good will be done by the party that hath offended : and also that doth keep the soul by the same power through faith (which also is his own proper gift) unto eternal glory.

Again , that is a pardon not conditional but freely given ; Consider first , it is set in opposition to works. *You are not under the Law.* Secondly, The promise that is made to them (saying, *Sin shall not have dominion over you*) doth not run with any condition , as on their part to be done ; but meerly and alone because they were (*under*) or because they had the Grace of God extended to them. *Sin shall not have dominion over you* , For (mark the reason) *For you are not under the Law , but under Grace.* The words being thus opened , and the truth thus laid down , how there is never a believer under the Covenant of Works , but under Grace , the free, rich , unchangeable love of God ; it remaineth that in the first place we prove the Doctrine, and after that proceed.

Now in the Doctrine there is two things to be considered and proved. First, That believers are under Grace. Secondly, Not under the Law as a Covenant of works (for so

you must not understand me) For these two, we need go no further then the very words themselves, the first part of the words proves the first part of the Doctrine, *You are not under the Law*; the second part proves the other, *But (ye are) under Grace.*

But besides these consider with me a few things for the demonstrating of these truths; as,

First, They are not under the Law; because their sins are pardoned; which could not be if they were dealt withal according to the Law, and their being under it; for the Law alloweth of no repentance, but accuseth, curseth, and condemneth every one that is under it. *Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things written in the Book of the Law to do them, Gal. 3. 10.* But I say, believers having their sins forgiven them, it is because they are under another, even a New Covenant, *Heb. 8. 8. Behold the days come, saith the Lord, that I will make a new Covenant with them: For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more, verse 4.*

Secondly, They are not under the Law; because their sins and iniquities are not only forgiven, but they are forgiven them freely: they that stand in the first Covenant, and continue there, are to have never a sin forgiven them, unless they can give God a compleat satisfaction; for the Law calls for it at their hands,

hands, saying, *Pay me that thou owest.* O but when God deals with his Saints by the Covenant of Grace, it is not so, for it is said, *And when he saw they had nothing to pay, he frankly and freely, forgave them all. I will heal their back-slidings and love them freely. I will blot out thy transgressions for mine own sake,* &c, Luke 7. 42. Hosea 14. 4. Isaiah 43. 25.

Thirdly, The Saints are not under the Law, because the righteousness that they stand justified before God in, is not their own actual righteousness by the Law, but by *imputation*; and is really the righteousness of another, namely, of God in Christ, 2 Cor. 5. 21. Phil. 3. 8, 9, 10. *Even the righteousness of God, which is by faith of Jesus Christ, which is unto all, and upon all (that is imputed to) them that believe,* Rom. 3. 22. But if they were under the Old Covenant, the Covenant of Works, then their righteousness must be their own * *But it is impossible that the righteousness of man by the Law should save him.* or no forgiveness of sins, *If thou do well, shalt not thou be accepted? but if thou transgress, sin lieth at the door, saith the Law,* Gen. 4. 7.

Fourthly, In a word, whatsoever they do receive, whether it be conversion to God, whether it be pardon of sin, whether it be faith or hope, whether it be righteousness, whether it be strength, whether it be the Spirit, or the fruits thereof, whether it be
victor

victory over sin, death or hell, whether it be heaven, everlasting life, and glory unexpressible, or whatsoever it be, it comes to them freely, God having no first eye to what they would do, or should do, for the obtaining of the same. But to take this in pieces. 1. In a word, are they converted? God finds them first, for saith he, *I am found of them that sought me not*, Isa. 65. 1.

2. Have they pardon of sin? They have that also freely, *I will heal their back-slidings, and love them freely*, Hos. 14. 4.

3. Have they faith? It is the gift of God in Christ Jesus, *and he is not only the author* (that is the beginner thereof) *but he doth also perfect the same*, Heb. 12. 2.

4. Have they hope? It is God that is the first cause thereof. *Remember thy word unto thy servant, wherein THOU hast caused me to hope*, Psal. 119. 49.

5. Have they righteousness? It is the free gift of God, Rom. 5. 17.

6. Have they strength to do the work of God in their generations? or any other thing that God would have them do, that also is a free gift from the Lord; for without him, we neither do, nor can do any thing, *John 15. 5*.

7. Have we comfort, or consolation? We have it not for what we have done, but from God through Christ; for he is the God of all our comforts and consolations, 2 Cor. 1.

8. Have

3. Have we the Spirit, or the fruits thereof? It is the gift of the Father. *How much more shall your heavenly Father give the holy Spirit to them that ask him?* Luke 11. 13. *Thou hast wrought all our works for us,* Isa. 26. 12.

And so I say, whether it be victory over sin, death, hell, or the devil, it is given us by the victory of Christ. *But thanks be to God which hath given us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ,* 1 Cor. 15. 57. *Rom. 7. 24, 25.* Heaven and glory it is also the gift of him who giveth his riches all things to enjoy, Mat. 25.

So that these things, if they be duly and soberly considered, will give satisfaction in this thing. I might have added many more for the clearing of these things: At first, when God came to man to convert him, he found him a *dead man*, Eph. 2. 1, 2. he found him an *enemy to God, Christ, and the salvation of his own soul*; he found him wallowing in all manner of *wickedness*, he found him *saking pleasure therein with all delight and greediness*.

2. He was fain to *quickon him by putting his Spirit into him, and to translate him by the mighty operation thereof* (words) *from death to life*.

3. He was fain to reveal Christ Jesus unto him, *man being altogether senseless, and ignorant of his blessed Jesus,* 2 Mar. 11. 25, 27. 1 Cor. 2. 7, 8, 9, 10.

4. He was fain to break the snare of the devil, and to let poor man, poor bound and fettered man, out of the chains of the enemy. Now

Now we are to proceed, and the things that we are to treat upon in the second place, are these.

* *Besides the reasons already given.*

First, * why it is a free and unchangeable grace.

Secondly, Who they are, that are actually brought into his free and unchangeable Covenant of Grace, and how they are brought in.

Thirdly, What are the priviledges of those that are actually brought into this free and glorious grace of the glorious God of heaven, and glory.

For the first, *Why it is a free and unchangeable grace*; and for the opening of this, we must consider, First, How and through whom this grace doth come to be, first free to us, and secondly unchangeable. This grace is free to us, through conditions in another; that is, by way of Covenant, or Bargain; for this Grace comes by way of Covenant or Bargain to us, yet made with another, for us.

First, That it comes by way of Covenant, Contract, or Bargain (though not personally with us) be pleased to consider these Scriptures, where it is said, *Psalm*

* *The word David in this place signifieth Christ, as also in these Scriptures.*

89. 3. * *I have made a Covenant with my chosen: I have sworn unto David my servant, And as for thee al-*

so,

so, by the blood of thy Covenant (speaking of Christ) have I sent forth the prisoners out of the pit, wherein was no water, Zech. 9. 9, 10, 11. Again, You have sold your selves for nought, and you shall be bought without money. Ezek. 34. 23, 24. Chap. 37. 24, 25. Blessed be the Lord (therefore saith Zacharias) for he hath visited and (also) REDEEMED his people. And hath raised up an horn of salvation for us, in the house of his servant David.

As he spake by the mouth of his holy Prophets, which have been since the world

I might give you more Scriptures, but pray consider the second thing.

began: that we should be saved from our enemies, and from the hands of all that hate us: To perform his mercy promised to our Fathers, and to remember his holy Covenant, or Bargain, Luke 1, 68, 69, 70, 71, 72. And if any should be offended with the plainness of these words as some poor souls may be through ignorance, let them be pleased to read soberly that 49. Chapter of the the Prophet *Isaiab*, from the 1. verse to the 12. and there they may see that it runs as plain a Bargain, as if two should be making of a Bargain between themselves, and concluding upon several conditions on both sides: But more of this hereafter.

Now secondly, This Covenant (I say) was made with one, not with many; and also confirmed in the conditions of it with one, not with

110 *The New Covenant made with Christ.*

with several, First, That the Covenant was made with one, see *Gal. 3. 16.* *New to Abraham and to his seed was the promise made; he saith not to seeds, as of many; but as of one; and to thy seed, which is Christ, ver. 17. And thus I say, the Covenant which was confirmed before of God in Christ, &c.* The Covenant was made with the seed of *Abraham*, not the seeds, but the seed, which is the Lord Jesus Christ, our head and undertaker in the things concerning the Covenant.

3. The condition was made with one, and also accomplished by him alone, and not by several; yet in the nature, and for the everlasting deliverance of many; even by one man Jesus Christ, as it is clear from *Rom. 5. 15, 16, 17, &c.* and in *Zech 9. 11.* the Lord saith to Christ, *And as for thee; mark, as for thee also, by the blood of the Covenant,* or as for thee whose Covenant was by blood; that is, the conditions of the Covenant was, that thou shouldest spill thy blood; which having been done in the account of God (saith he) I according to my condition, have let go the prisoners, or sent them out of the pit wherein was no water; those Scriptures in *Galatians* the 3. at the 16. and 17. verses that are above cited, are notable to our purpose, the sixteenth verse saith, It was made with Christ; and the seventeenth saith, It was also confirmed in, or with

with God in him, pray read with understanding. Now (saith Paul) the promises were not made unto seeds, as of many; but as of one, and to thy seed, which is Christ. — The Law which was four hundred and thirty years after cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect. Not that the Covenant was with Abraham and Christ together, as two persons that were the undertakers of the same; the promise was made with, or, to Abraham afterwards: but the Covenant with Christ before. Further, that the Covenant was not personally made with Abraham, no, nor with any of the Fathers, neither so as that they were the persons that should stand ingaged, to be the accomplishers thereof, either in whole or in part, which is very clear.

First, Because this Covenant was not made with God and the creature; not with another poor Adam, that only stood upon the strength of natural abilities: but this Covenant was made with the second person, with the eternal Word of God; with him that was every ways as holy, as pure, as infinite, as powerful, and as everlasting as God (*Prov.* 22. 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30. *Zech.* 13. 7. *Rev.* 1. 11, 17, 22, 13, 16. *Isa.* 9. 6. *Phil.* 2. 6. *Heb.* 1.)

Secondly, This Covenant or Bargain was made indeed and in truth, before man was in being.

being. Oh! God thought of the salvation of man before there was any transgression of man; for then I say, and not since then, was the Covenant of Grace made with the undertaker thereof; for all the other sayings are to shew unto us that glorious plot and contrivance that was concluded on before time between the Father and the Son, which may very well be concluded on for a truth from the Word of God, if you consider; First, That the Scripture doth declare that the price was agreed on by the Son before time; the promise was made to him by the Father, that he should have his Bargain before time, and the choice, who they were that should be saved, was made before time, even before the world began.

For the First, That the price was agreed upon before the World began; Consider the word which speaketh of the price that was paid for sinners, even *The precious Blood of Christ*; It saith of him, *who verily was fore-ordained before the foundation of the world, but was made manifest in these last times for you, who by him do believe*, &c. 1 Pet. 1. 19, 20. Mark, it was fore-ordained or concluded on between the Father and his Son, before the world began.

Secondly, The promise from God to the Son was also made in the same manner, as it is clear, where the Apostle saith with comfort to his soul, that he had *hopes of eternal life, which*
 God

God that cannot be promised before the World began, Tit. 1. 2. which could be to none but the Mediator of the New Covenant, because there was none else to whom it should be made but he.

Thirdly, The choice was also made then, even before man had a being in this world, as it is evident where he saith, *Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed US with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places IN Christ, according as he hath chosen US in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love, Eph. 1. 3, 4.* Nay, did I look upon it here to be necessary, I should shew you very largely and clearly, that God did not only make the Covenant with Christ before the world began, and the conditions thereof: But I could also shew you that the very Saints qualifications as part of the Covenant, was then concluded on by the Father and the Son, according to these Scriptures, *Eph. 1. 3, 4. Chap. 2. 10. and Rom. 8. 28.* which it may be I may touch upon further anon.

Did I think this would meet with any opposition, I should be in this more large.

But Thirdly, This Covenant was not made with any of the Fathers, neither in whole, nor in part, as the undertakers thereof; for then it must be also concluded, that they are

Co-partners with Christ in our salvation, and so, that Christ is not Mediator alone: but this would be blasphemy for any one to surmize. And therefore by the way, when thou readest of the New Covenant in Scripture, as though it was made with *Adam, Noah, Abraham, or David*, thou art to consider thus with thy self; First, That God spake to them in such a way, for to shew, or signifie unto us, how he did make the Covenant, that he did make with Christ, before the world began, they being types of him. Secondly, That he thereby might let them understand, that he was the same then as he is now, and now as he was then; and that then it was resolved on between his Son and He, that in after ages his Son should in their natures, from their loins, and for their sins be born of a Woman, hanged on the Cross, &c. for them: for all along you may see that when he speaketh to them of the New Covenant, he mentions their seed, their seed still aiming at Christ; Christ the Seed of the Woman, was to break the Serpents head; *Gen. 3. 15. Gen. 17. Psal. 87. 36.* Now to *Abraham* and his Seed, was the promise made, his seed shall endure for ever, and his Throne as the days of heaven, &c. still pointing at Christ. And Thirdly, To stir up their faith and expectations to be constant unto the end, in waiting for that which he and his Son had concluded

cluded on before time, and what he had since the conclusion declared unto the world by the Prophets. Fourthly, It appeareth that the heart of God was much delighted therein also, as is evident, in that he was always in every age, declaring of that unto them, which before he had prepared for them. O this good God of Heaven!

Object. But (you will say perhaps) the Scriptures say plainly, that the New Covenant was, and is made with Believers, saying, *The days come, saith the Lord, that I will make a New Covenant with the House of Israel, and the House of Judah, not according to the Covenant that I made with their Fathers in the day in which I brought them out of the Land of Egypt, &c.* Heb. 8. 10, 11, 12. Jer. 31. 33. So that it doth not run with Christ alone, but with believers also. *I will make a New Covenant with the House of Israel and Judah, &c.*

1. *Answ.* First, It cannot be meant that the New Covenant was made with Christ, and the House of Israel and Judah as the undertaker thereof: for so it was made with Christ alone, which is clear in that, it was made long before the House of Israel and Judah had a being, as I shewed before.

2. *Answ.* But Secondly, These words here are spoken, first to shew rather the end of the Ceremonies, then the beginning or rise of

116 *The New Covenant made with Christ.*

the New Covenant. Mind a little, The Apostle is labouring to beat the Jews (to whom he wrote this Epistle) off of the Ceremonies of the Law, of the Priests, Altar, Offerings, Temple, &c. and to bring them to the right understanding of the thing and things that they held forth, which was to come, and to put an end to those. If you do but understand the Epistle to the *Hebrews*; it is a discourse that sheweth, that the Son of God being come, there is an end put to the Ceremonies; for they were to continue so long and no longer. It, saith the Apostle, *stood in meats and drinks, and divers washings, and carnal ordinances imposed on them until the time of reformation*; that is, until Christ did come. But Christ being come an high Priest of good things to come, &c. — puts an end to the things and ordinances of the Levitical Priest-hood, read the 7, 8, 9, 10. Chapters, and you will find this true. So then, when he saith, *The days come in which I will make a New Covenant*, it is rather to be meant a changing of the administration, a taking away the type, the shadow, the Ceremonies from the House of *Israel* and *Judah*, and revealing, by the Birth of Christ, and the Death of Christ, and the offering of the Body of him, whom the shadows and types did point out, to be indeed he; whom God the Father had given for a Ransom by Covenant for

for the souls of the Saints; and also to manifest the truth of that Covenant, which was made between the Father and the Son before the world began: for though the New Covenant was made before the world began, and also every one in all ages was saved by the virtue of that Covenant; yet that Covenant was never so clearly made manifest, as at the coming, death, and resurrection of Christ; and therefore saith the Scripture, *He hath brought life and immortality to light through the Gospel*, 2 Tim. 1. 9, 10. *Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to the works of righteousness which we have done: but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ before the world began (there is the Covenant) but it was made MANIFEST by the APPEARING of our Saviour Jesus Christ who hath abolished death, and brought life and immortality to LIGHT through the Gospel.* Therefore I say, these words are rather to discover, that the time was come to change the dispensation, to take away the type and bring in the substance, and so manifesting that more clearly, which before lay hid in dark sayings and figures. And this is usual with God to speak in this manner.

Again, if at any time you do find in the Scripture, that the Covenant of Works is spoken of, as the first Covenant that was manifested,

118 *The New Covenant made with Christ.*

and so before the second Covenant; yet you must understand that it was so only, as to manifestation, that is, it was first given to man, yet not made before that which was made Christ: And indeed it was requisite that it should be given, or made known first, that thereby there might be a way made for the second by its discovering of sin, and the sad state that man was in after the fall, by reason of that. And again, that the other might be made the

Yet the second Adam was before the first, and also the second Covenant before the first. This is a Riddle.

more welcome to the sons of men. And in this did Christ in time most gloriously answer *Adam*, who was the figure of Christ (*Rom. 5.*) as well as of o-

ther things: for as the first Covenant was made with the first *Adam*, so was the second Covenant made with the second; for these are and were the two great publick persons, or representators of the whole world, as to the first and second Covenants; and therefore you find God speaking on this wise in Scripture concerning the New Covenant, *My Covenant shall stand fast with HIM*, *Psal. 89. 28, 34, 35. My mercy will I keep for HIM for evermore*, saith God: *my Covenant shall stand fast with HIM* (this *HIM* is Christ, if you compare this with *Luke 1. 32.*) *My Covenant will I not break*, namely that which was made with

with *HIM*, nor alter the thing that is gone out of my mouth: Once have I sworn by my Holiness that I will not lie unto

DAVID, to whom this was spoken figuratively, in the

David here is to be understood Christ.

person of Christ: for that was Gods usual way to speak of the glorious things of the Gospel in the time of the Law, as I said before.

Secondly, The conditions also were concluded on, and agreed to be fulfilled by him; as it is clear, if you understand his saying in the 12. of *John* at the 27. verse, where he foretelleth his death, and saith, *Now is my soul troubled, and what shall I say? Father save me from this hour; but for this cause came I (into the world) unto this hour.*: as if he had said, My business is now not to shrink from my sufferings that are a coming upon me; for these are the things that are a great part of the conditions contracted in the Covenant which stands between my Father and I; therefore I shall not pray that this might be absolutely removed from me. For, *for this cause came I into the world*; even this was the very terms of the Covenant. By this you may say we are under Grace.

Now in a Covenant there is these three things to be considered.

First, What it is, that is covenanted for.

I 4

Secondly,

Secondly, The conditions, upon which the persons, who are concerned in it, do agree.

Thirdly, If the conditions on both sides be not according to the agreement fulfilled: then the Covenant standeth not but is made void.

And this New Covenant in these particulars is very exactly fulfilled, and made out in Christ:

First, The thing or things covenanted for, was the salvation of man, but made good in Christ. *The Son of man is come to seek and save that which was lost. The Son of Man did not come to destroy mens lives, but to save them. I give my life a ransom for many. And this is the will (or Covenant) of him that sent me, that of all which he hath given me, I should lose nothing; but should raise it up again at the day,* John 6. 39.

Secondly, As touchsing the conditions agreed on, they run thus.

First, On the Mediators side, that he should come into the vworld; and then on the Fathers side, that he should give him a body. This was one of the *glorious conditions* between the Father and Christ. *Wherefore when he cometh into the vworld, he saith, Sacrifices and Offerings thou wouldest not, that is, the Old Covenant must not stand, but give way to another Sacrifice vvhich thou hast prepared, which is the giving up my Manhood to the stroaks of thy Justice,*

Justice, for a body hast thou prepared me, Heb. 13. 20, 21. This doth prove us under Grace.

Secondly, On the Mediators side, that he should be put to death; and on God the Fathers side, that he should raise him up again; this was concluded on also to be done between God the Father, and his Son Jesus Christ. On Christs side, that he should die to give the justice of the Father *satisfaction*, and so to take away the curse that was due to us *wretched sinners*, by reason of our transgressions: and that God his Father being every ways fully and compleatly satisfied, should by his mighty power revive and raise him up again. He hath brought again — our Lord Jesus, that is, from death to life, *through* (the vertue or effectual satisfaction that he received from) *the blood* (that was shed according to the terms) *of the everlasting Covenant*, Heb. 13. 21, 22.

Thirdly, On the Mediators side, that he should be made a curse; and on the Fathers side, that through him sinners should be inheritors of the *blessing*; what wonderful love doth there appear by this in the heart of our Lord Jesus, in suffering such things for our poor bodies and souls, Gal. 3. 13, 14. This is Grace.

Fourthly, That on the Mediators side there should be *by him* a victory over Hell, Death, and the Devil, and the curse of the Law: and on the

the Fathers side, that these should be communicated to sinners, and they set at liberty thereby, *Zech. 9. 12. Turn to the strong hold, saith God, ye prisoners of hope, even to day do I declare that I will render double unto thee: Why so? It is because of the blood of my Sons Covenant, verse 11. which made Paul (though sensible of a body of death, and of the sting that death did strike into the souls of all those that are found in their sins) bold to say, O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? The sting of death is sin, that is true, and the terrible Law of God doth aggravate, and set it home with unsupportable torment and pain: but shall I be daunted at this? No, I thank my God through Jesus Christ, he hath given me the victory; so that now, though I be a sinner in my self, yet I can by believing in Jesus Christ the Mediator of this New Covenant, triumph over the Devil, Sin, Death and Hell; and say, do not fear, my soul, seeing the victory is obtained over all my enemies through my Lord Jesus, 1 Cor. 15. 55, 56, 57. This is the way to prove our selves under Grace.*

Fifthly, that on the Mediators side he should by thus doing bring in *everlasting* righteousness for Sinners, *Dan. 9. 24.* and that the Father for this should give them an everlasting Kingdom, *1 Pet. 1. 3, 4, 5. Eph. 1. 4. 2 Tim. 4. 18. Luke 22. 28, 29.*

But

But in the next place, this was not all; that is, the *Covenant of Grace*, with the conditions thereof, was not only concluded on by both parties to be done: but *Jesus Christ*, he must be *authorized* to do what was concluded on, touching this *Covenant* by way of *Office*. I shall therefore speak a word or two also, touching the *Offices* (at least some of them) that *Christ Jesus* did, and doth still execute as the *Mediator* of the *New Covenant*, which also was typed out by the *Levitical Law*, for this is the way to prove that we are not under the *Law* but under *Grace*.

And first, His first Office, after the *Covenant* was made and concluded upon, was, that *Jesus* should become bound as a *Surety*, and stand ingaged upon *Oath* to see that all the conditions of the *Covenant*, that was concluded on between him and his *Father*, should according to the *agreement*, be accomplished by him. And secondly, that after that, he should be the *messenger* from *God* to the world, for to declare the mind of *God*, touching the tenor and nature of both the *Covenants*, especially of the *New one*; the *Scripture* saith, that *Jesus Christ* was not only made a *Priest* by an *Oath*, but also a *surety*, or bonds-man, as in the 7 of *Hebrews*, at the 21. 22. verses

verses; in the 21. verse he speaketh of the priesthood of Christ, that it was with an *Oath*, faith in the 22. verse. *By so much (also) was Jesus made the surety of a better Testament, or Covenant.*

Now the Covenant was not only made on Jesus Christs side with an *Oath*: but also on God the Fathers side, that it might be for the better ground of stablishment to all those that are, or are to be the children of the *Promise*. Methinks it is wonderful to consider, that the God and Father of our souls by Jesus Christ, should be so bent upon the salvation of sinners, that he would covenant with his Son Jesus for the *security* of them; and also that there should pass an *Oath* on both sides, for the confirmation of their resolution to do good: as if the Lord had said, My Son, thou, and I, have here made a Covenant, that I, on my part, should do thus, and thus; and that thou on thy part shouldest do so, and so: now that we may give these souls the best *ground* of comfort that may be, there shall pass an *Oath* on both sides, that our children may see that we do indeed love them. *Wherein God willing more ABUNDANTLY to shew unto the heirs of promise, the immutability of his counsel (in making of the Covenant) confirmed it by an Oath—— That we might have strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us;*

us; Heb. 6. 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18. Heb. 7. 21. Mark, the sixth Chapter saith God confirmed his part by an Oath; and the seventh saith, Christ was made, or set on his Office also by an Oath. Again, Once (saith God) have I sworn by my holiness that I will not lie unto David, Psal. 89. 34, 35. nor alter the thing that is gone out of my mouth; as was before cited.

Herein you may see that God and Christ was in good earnest about the salvation of sinners; for so soon as ever the Covenant was made, the next thing was, who should be bound to see all those things fulfilled which was conditioned on, between the Father and the Son: The Angels they would have no hand in it; The world could not do it; The Devils had rather see them damned, then they would wish them the least good; thus Christ looked, and there was none to help; though the burthen lay never so heavy upon his shoulder he must bear it himself; for there was none besides himself to uphold, or so much as to step in to be bound, to see the conditions (before mentioned) fulfilled, neither in whole, nor in part (Isa. 63. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6.) So that he must not be only he, with whom the Covenant was made: but he must also become the bonds-man, or surety thereof; and so stand bound to see that all, and every particular thing conditioned for, should be both in manner, and matter, at the time, and

and place, according to the agreement, duly, and orderly fulfilled. Is not this grace?

Now as touching the nature of a *surety* and his work (in some things) it is well known to most men; therefore I shall be very brief upon it.

First, You know a *surety* is at the bargains making; and so was Christ. *Then was I by him*, Prov. 8. 30.

Secondly, A *surety* must consent to the terms of the Agreement, or Covenant; and so did Christ Jesus.

Now that which he did engage, should be done for sinners, according to the terms of the Covenant, it was this.

First, That there should be a complete satisfaction given to God for the sins of the world; for that was one great thing that was agreed upon, when the Covenant was made, Heb. 10. 5.

Secondly, That Jesus Christ should (as afore said) bring in an everlasting righteousness to cloath (his body) the Saints withal, Dan. 9. 24. 25. Here is grace.

Thirdly, That he should take in charge to see all those forth coming without spot or wrinkle, at the day of his glorious appearing from heaven to judgment, and to quit them before the Judgment-seat.

Again, Thirdly in the work of a *surety*, there is required by the creditor, that the *surety* should

should stand to what he is *bound*; and on the *sureties* there is a consenting thereunto.

First, The *creditor* looks that in case the *debtor* proves a bankrupt, that then the *surety* should ingage the payment. Is not this grace.

However it is in other engagements, yet it is thus in this.

Secondly, The *creditor* looks that the *surety* should be an *able man*: now our *surety* was, and is, in this case every way suitable, for he is *heir of all things*.

Thirdly, The *creditor* appoints the day, and also looks that the *Covenant* should be kept, and the debt paid according to the time appointed; and it is required of *sureties* (as well as stewards) that they be found faithful, namely, to pay the debt according to the bargain: and therefore it is said, *When the fulness of time was come, God sent forth his Son—made under the Law, to redeem them that are under the Law* (according to his suretiship) *Gal. 4. 4, 5.* thus comes grace to Saints.

Fourthly, The *creditor* looks that his *money* should be brought into his house, to his own habitation. Jesus our *surety*, in this also is faithful; for by his own blood, which was the payment, he is entred into the holy place, even into heaven it self which is Gods dwelling place, to render the *value* and *price* that was agreed upon for the salvation of *sinners*; but I shall speak

Speak more of this in another head, therefore I pass it.

Though the debtor together with the surety is liable to pay the debt by the Law of man, yet Christ our surety only by the Covenant of Grace.

Again fourthly, if the surety stands bound, the debtor is at liberty, and if the Law do issue out any process to take any, it will be the surety; and O! how wonderful true was this ac-

complished, in that when Christ our surety came down from heaven, Gods Law did so seize upon the Lord Jesus, and so cruelly handle him, and so exact upon him, that it would never let him alone, until it had accused him, and condemned him, executed him, and scrued his very hearts blood out of his precious heart, and side; nay, and more than this too, as I shall shew hereafter.

But secondly, in the next place, after that Jesus Christ had stood bound, and was become our surety in things pertaining to this Covenant, his next office was to be the messenger of God touching his Mind, and the tenour of the Covenant, unto the poor world; and this did the Prophet fore-see long before, when he saith, *Behold I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare thy way before thee; (speaking of John the Baptist) And he shall prepare thy way before thee: (and then he speaketh of Christ to the people, saying,) And the Lord whom ye seek,*

Christ the Messenger of the New Covenant. 179

seek, shall suddenly come to his Temple, Who is he? even the messenger of the Covenant, whom ye delight in: (that is Christ) behold he shall come saith the Lord of hosts, Mal. 3. 1.

Now the Covenant being made before between the Father and the Son, and Jesus Christ becoming bound to see all the conditions fulfilled, this being done, he comes down from Heaven to Earth, to declare to the world what God the Father and He, had concluded on before, and what was the mind of the Father towards the world, concerning the salvation of their souls: and indeed who could better come of such an errand, then he that stood by when the Covenant was made; then he that shook hands with the Father in making of the Covenant; then he that was become a surety in the behalf of poor Sinners, according to the terms of this Covenant.

Now you know a messenger commonly when he cometh, he doth bring some errand to them to whom he is sent, either of what is done for them, or what they would have them, whom they send unto, do for them, or such like. Now what a glorious message was that which our Lord Jesus Christ came down from Heaven withal to declare unto poor sinners, and that from God his Father I say, how glorious was it, and how sweet is it to you that have seen your selves lost by nature; and it will also ap-

speake more of this in another head , therefore I pass it.

Though the debtor together with the surety is liable to pay the debt by the Law of man, yet Christ our surety only by the Covenant of Grace.

Again fourthly , if the surety stands bound, the debtor is at liberty , and if the Law do issue out any process to take any, it vwill be the surety; and O! how wonderful true was this ac-

complished, in that when Christ our surety came down from heaven , Gods Law did so seize upon the Lord Jesus, and so cruelly handle him, and so exact upon him , that it would never let him alone , until it had accused him, and condemned him , executed him, and scrued his very hearts blood out of his precious heart, and side; nay, and more than this too , as I shall shew hereafter.

But secondly , in the next place , after that Jesus Christ had stood bound, and was become our surety in things pertaining to this Covenant , his next office was to be the messenger of God touching his Mind , and the tenour of the Covenant , unto the poor world; and this did the Prophet fore-see long before , when he saith , *Behold I will send my messenger , and he shall prepare thy way before thee ;* (speaking of John the Baptist) *And he shall prepare thy way before thee :* (and then he speaketh of Christ to the people, saying,) *And the Lord whom ye seek,*

Christ the Messenger of the New Covenant. 179

seek, shall suddenly come to his Temple, Who is he? even the messenger of the Covenant, whom ye delight in: (that is Christ) behold he shall come saith the Lord of hosts, Mal. 3. 1.

Now the Covenant being made before between the Father and the Son, and Jesus Christ becoming bound to see all the conditions fulfilled, this being done, he comes down from Heaven to Earth, to declare to the world what God the Father and He, had concluded on before, and what was the mind of the Father towards the world, concerning the salvation of their souls: and indeed who could better come of such an errand, then he that stood by when the Covenant was made; then he that shook hands with the Father in making of the Covenant; then he that was become a surety in the behalf of poor Sinners, according to the terms of this Covenant.

Now you know a messenger commonly when he cometh, he doth bring some errand to them to whom he is sent, either of what is done for them, or what they would have them, whom they send unto, do for them, or such like. Now what a glorious message was that which our Lord Jesus Christ came down from Heaven withal to declare unto poor sinners, and that from God his Father I say, how glorious was it, and how sweet is it to you that have seen your selves lost by nature; and it will also ap-

pear a glorious one to you, who are a seeking after Jesus Christ; if you do but consider these following things about what he was sent.

First, Jesus Christ was sent from Heaven, to declare unto the world, from God the Father, that he was *wonderfully* filled with love to poor sinners. First, In that he would *forgive* their sins. Secondly, In that he would *save* their souls. Thirdly, In that he would make them *heirs* of his glory. *For God so loved the World, that he gave his only begotten Son.* — *For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved.* John 3. 15, 16, 18.

Secondly, God sent Jesus Christ to tell the poor world, how that he would do this for poor sinners, and yet be *just*, and yet do his *justice* no wrong; and that was to be done by Jesus Christ, his *dying* of a *curst* death in the *room* of poor sinners, to *satisfie justice*, and make way for mercy; to take away the *stumbling-blocks*, and set open *Heaven-gates*; to overcome *Satan*, and break off from sinners his chains; to set *Luke 4. 18.* open the prison doors, and to let the prisoners go free, *Isa. 61. 1, 2, 3.* And this was the *message* that Christ was to *deliver* to the world by commandment from his Father; and this did he tell us when he came of his *errand*; where he saith, *I lay down*

Christ the Messenger of the New Covenant. 131
down my life for my Sheep. — No man taketh
it a way from me, but I lay it down of my self:
I have power to lay it down, and to take it up a-
gain: and this commandment have I received of
my Father, John 10. 15, 16, 17, 18. even
this commandment hath my Father given me,
that I should both do this thing, and also tell
it unto you.

Thirdly, He was not only sent as a *Messenger* to declare this his Fathers love; but also how dearly he himself loved sinners, what a heart he had to do them good, where he saith, *All that the Father hath given me, shall come to me* (and let me tell you my heart too, saith Christ) *He that cometh unto me, I will in no wise cast out.* As my Father is willing to give you unto me, even so am I, as willing to receive you. As my Father is willing to give you Heaven, so am I willing to make you fit for it, by washing you with my own blood: I lay down my life, that you might have life; and this I was sent to tell you of my Father.

Fourthly, His *Message* was further; he came to tell them how, and which way they should come to enjoy these glorious benefits: also by laying down motives, to stir them up to accept of the benefits: The way is laid down in *John 3. 14, 15.* where Christ saith, *As Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness; even so must the Son of Man be lifted up, or caused*

pear a glorious one to you, who are a seeking after Jesus Christ; if you do but consider these following things about vvhhat he vvas sent.

First, Jesus Christ was sent from Heaven, to declare unto the world, from God the Father, that he was *wonderfully* filled with love to poor sinners. First, In that he would *forgive* their *sins*. Secondly, In that he would *save* their *souls*. Thirdly, In that he would make them *heirs* of his glory. For God so *loved* the World, that he gave his only begotten Son. — For God sent not his Son into the world to *condemn* the world; but that the world *through him* might be *saved*. John 3. 15, 16, 18.

Secondly, God sent Jesus Christ to tell the poor world, how that he would do this for poor sinners, and yet be *just*, and yet do his *justice* no wrong; and that was to be done by Jesus Christ, his *dying* of a *curst* death in the *room* of poor sinners, to *satisfie justice*, and make way for mercy; to take away the *stumbling-blocks*, and set open *Heaven-gates*; to overcome *Satan*, and break off from *sinners* his chains; to set *Luke 4. 18.* open the prison doors, and to let the prisoners go free, *Isa. 61. 1, 2, 3.* And this was the *message* that Christ was to *deliver* to the world by commandment from his Father; and this did he tell us when he came of his *errand*; where he saith, *I lay down*

Christ the Messenger of the New Covenant. 131
down my life for my Sheep. — No man taketh
it a way from me, but I lay it down of my self:
I have power to lay it down, and to take it up a-
gain: and this commandment have I received of
my Father, John 10. 15, 16, 17, 18. even
this commandment hath my Father given me,
that I should both do this thing, and also tell
it unto you.

Thirdly, He was not only sent as a *Mes-
senger* to declare this his Fathers love; but also
how dearly he himself loved sinners, what a
heart he had to do them good, where he saith,
*All that the Father hath given me, shall come
to me* (and let me tell you my heart too, saith
Christ) *He that cometh unto me, I will in no
wise cast out.* As my Father is willing to give
you unto me, even so am I, as willing to receive
you. As my Father is willing to give you Hea-
ven, so am I willing to make you fit for it,
by washing you with my own blood: I lay
down my life, that you might have life; and
this I was sent to tell you of my Father.

Fourthly, His *Message* was further; he came
to tell them how, and which way they should
come to enjoy these glorious benefits: also by
laying down motives, to stir them up to ac-
cept of the benefits: The way is laid down
in *John 3. 14, 15.* where Christ saith, *As
Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness; e-
ven so must the Son of Man be lifted up, or caused*

132 *Christ the messenger of the New Covenant.*

to be hanged on the Cross; and die the death,
That whosoever believeth in him, should not perish,
but have everlasting life. The way therefore
 that thou shalt have the benefit and comfort of
 that which my Father and I have *covenanted*
for thee; I am come down from heaven to
 earth on purpose to give thee intelligence, and
 to certifie thee of it: know therefore, that as I
 have been born of a woman, and have taken
 this body upon me, it is on purpose that I
 might offer it up upon the Cross a Sacrifice to
 God, to give him satisfaction for *thy sins*, that
 his *mercy* may be extended to *thy soul*, without
 any wrong done to *justice*; and this thou art to
 believe, and not in the notion, but from thy
 very whole soul. Now the motives are many.
 First; If they do not leave their sins, and come
 to Jesus Christ, that their sins may be *washed*
away by his blood, they are sure to be *damned*
in hell; for the *Law* hath condemned them
already, John 3. 18, 19. Secondly, But if they
 do come, they shall have the *bosome* of Christ to
 lye in, the *kingdom* of Heaven to dwell in, the
Angels and *Saints* for their companions, shall
 shine there like the *Sun*, shall be there for *ever*,
 shall sit upon the *Thrones* of *Judgment*, &c.
 Here is Grace.

Methinks if I had but time to speak fully to
 all things that I could speak to from these two
 heavenly Truths, and to make application
 thereof;

thereof; surely, with the blessing of God, I think it might perswade some vile and abominable wretch to lay down his arms that he hath taken up in defiance against God (and is marching hell-wards, poste haste with the Devil) I say methinks it should stop them, and make them willing to look back, and accept of salvation for their poor condemned souls, before Gods eternal vengeance is executed upon them. O therefore! you that are upon this march, I beseech you consider a little. What shall Christ become a *drudge* for you? and will you be *drudges* for the Devil? Shall Christ covenant with God for the *salvation* of sinners? and shall sinners covenant with Hell, Death, and the Devil, for the *damnation* of their souls? Shall Christ come down from Heaven to Earth to declare this to sinners? and shall sinners stop their ears against this good tidings? Will you not hear the *errand* of Christ, although he *relate* you *tidings* of peace and salvation? How if he had came, having taken a command from his Father to damp you, and to send you to the Devils in Hell? Sinner hear his *message*; he speaketh *no harm*, his words are eternal life, all men that give ear unto them, they have eternal advantage by them. Advantage, I say, that never hath an end.

Besides, do but consider these two things; 'tis likethy may have some sway upon thy soul

First, When he came on his message, he came with tears in his eyes, and did even weepingly tender the terms of reconciliation to them; I say with tears in his eyes. And when he came near the City (i. e.) with his message of peace, beholding the hardness of their hearts, he wept over it, and took up a lamentation over it; because he saw they rejected his mercy, which was tidings of peace. (I say) wilt thou then slight a weeping Jesus, one that so loveth thy soul, that rather then he will lose thee, he will with tears perswade with thee.

2. Not only so, but also when he came, he came all on a goar blood to proffer mercy to thee, to shew thee still how dearly he did love thee; as if he had said, sinner, here is mercy for thee; but behold my bloody sweat, my bloody wounds, my cursed death; behold and see what danger I have gone through to come unto thy soul: I am come indeed unto thee, and do bring thee tidings of salvation, but it cost me my heart blood before I could come at thee, to give thee the fruits of my everlasting love. But more of this anon.

Thus have I spoken something concerning Christ, being the messenger of the New Covenant; but because I am not willing to cut too short of what shall come after, I shall pass by these things, not half touched, and come

to the other which I promised even now ; which was to shew you , that as there was Levitical Ceremonies , in , or , belonging to the first Covenant , so these Types , or Levitical Ceremonies , did represent the glorious things of the New Covenant. In those Ceremonies, you read of a Sacrifice , of a Priest to offer up the Sacrifice ; the place where, and the manner how he was to offer it : of which I shall speak something.

First , As touching the *Sacrifice* , you find that it was not to be offered up of all kind of beasts ; as of *Lions, Bears, Wolves, Tigers, Dragons, Serpents* , or such like. To signifie, that not all kind of *Creatures* that had sinned , as *Devils* the fallen *Angels* , should be saved : but the *Sacrifice* was to be taken out of some kind of *Beasts* and *Birds* : to signifie , that some of *Gods* *Creatures* that had sinned , he would be pleased to reconcile them to himself again ; as poor fallen *Man* and *Woman* , those miserable *Creatures* : God , the God of Heaven , had a good look for after their fall : but not for the *curst Devils* ; though more noble *Creatures* by *Creation* than *We*. Here is grace.

Now though these *Sacrifices* were offered ; yet they were not offered to the end , they should make the comers to , or offerers thereof *perfect* : but the things was to represent to the world , what God had in after ages for to do ;

which was even the salvation of his Creatures by that offering of the body of Jesus Christ, of which these were a shadow and a type for the accomplishing of the second Covenant. For Christ was by Covenant to offer a *Sacrifice*, and that an effectual one too, if he intended the salvation of sinners: *A body hast thou prepared me; I am come to do thy will*, Heb. 10.

I shall therefore shew you, *First*, what was expected of God in the *Sacrifice*, in the *Type*, and then shew you how it was answered in the *Antitype*. Secondly, I shall shew you the manner of the offering of the type; and so answerable thereto, to shew you the fitness of the *Sacrifice* of the *Body* of Christ, by way of answering some questions.

For the first of these.

First, God did expect that *Sacrifice* which he himself had appointed; and not another. To signify that none would serve his turn, but the body and soul of his appointed Christ, the Mediator of the New Covenant, *John* 1. 29.

Secondly, This *Sacrifice* must not be lame nor deformed; it must have no scar, spot or blemish; to signify, that Jesus Christ was to be a compleat *Sacrifice* by Covenant, *1 Pet.* 1. 29.

Thirdly, This *sacrifice* was to be taken out of the flock or herd; to signify that Jesus Christ was to come out of the race of Mankind, according to the Covenant, *Heb.* 10. 5.

But

But Secondly, As to the manner of it: *First*, the *sacrifice*, before it was offered, was to have the sins of the Children of *Israel* confessed over it: to signifie, that Jesus Christ must *Isa. 53. 4, 5, 6, 7. 1 Pet. 2. 24.* bear the sins of all his children by Covenant. *As for thee, by the blood of thy Covenant, in his own body on the tree, Zech. 9. 10, 11.*

Secondly, It must be had to the place appointed, namely, *without* the Camp of *Israel*: to signifie, that Jesus Christ must be *led* to the Mount *Calvary*, *Luke 23. 33.*

Thirdly, The *sacrifice* was to be killed there; to signifie, that Jesus Christ must, and did *suffer* without the City of *Jerusalem* for our salvation.

Fourthly, the *sacrifice* must not only have its life taken away, but also some of its *flesh* burned upon the *Altar*: to signifie, that Jesus Christ was not only to *dye* a natural death, but also that he should *undergo* the pains and *tortments* of the damned in *hell*.

Fifthly, Sometimes there must be a *living* offering, and a *dead* offering; as the goat that was killed and the scape goat; the *dead* bird, and the *living* bird, *Levit. 14 3, 4, 5, 6.* To signifie, that Jesus Christ must *dye*, and come to *life* again.

Sixthly, The goat that was to *dye*, was to be the *sin-offering*; that is, to be offered as the rest of the *sin-offerings*, to make an atone-

ment

ment as a type; and the *other goat*, was to have *all the sins* of the Children of *Israel* confessed over him, *Levit. 16.* from the 7. verse to the 22. and then to be let go into the wilderness, never to be caught again, to signify that *Christs death*, was to make satisfaction for sin; and his coming to life again, was to bring in everlasting *Rom. 4. 25.* justification, from the power, curse, and destroying nature of sin.

Seventhly, The scape goat was to be carried by a *fit* man into the wilderness. To signify that *Jesus Christ* should be both *fit* and *able*, to carry our sins quite away from us, so as they should never be laid to our charge again. Here is Grace.

Eighthly, The sacrifices under the Law, commonly part of them must be eaten, *Exod. 12. 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11.* To signify, that they that are saved, should spiritually feed on the *body* and *blood* of *Jesus Christ*, or else they have no life by him, *John 6. 51, 52, 53.*

Ninthly, This sacrifice must be eaten with *unleavened bread*: To signify, that they which love their sins, that devilish leaven of wickedness; they do not feed upon *Jesus Christ*.

Now of what hath been spoken, this is the sum: that there is a sacrifice under the New Covenant, as there was sacrifices under the Old; and that this sacrifice did every way answer that, or those: Indeed, they did but suffer for
sin

sin in shew, but he in reality; they as the shadow, but he as the substance. O! when Jesus Christ did come to make himself a sacrifice, or to offer himself for sin, you may understand that our sins was indeed charged to purpose upon him: O how they scared his soul, how they brake his body; insomuch that they made the blood run down his blessed face, and from his precious side; therefore

thou must understand these following things. First, that Jesus Christ by Covenant did dye for sin. Secondly, that his death was not a meer natural death, but a cursed death; even such a one as men do undergo from God for their sins (though he himself had none) even

such a death, as to endure the very pains and torments of hell; O sad pains! and in expressible torments, that this our sacrifice for sin went under. The pains of his body was not all; no, but the pains of his soul; for his soul was made an offering, as well as his body; yet all but one sacrifice, *Isa. 53*. To signifie, that the suffering of Christ was not only a bodily suffering, but a soul suffering; not only to suffer what man could inflict upon him: but also to suffer soul torments, that none but God can in-

As Christ did not suffer in his body without suffering in soul, nor yet in soul without his suffering in body: it was because not the body without the soul, but both the body and soul of the Saints should be for ever saved.

flit,

140 *Christ the Sacrifice of the New Covenant,*
flict, or suffer to be inflicted upon him. O the
torments of his soul! they were torment
indeed; his soul was that that felt the *wrath* of
God. *My soul saith he, is exceeding sorrowful,*
even unto death, Mat. 26. 38. My soul is trou-
bled, and what shall I say, John 12. 27. The
Rock was not so rent, as was his precious *soul*:
there was not such a terrible *darkness* on the face
of the earth then, as there was on his precious
soul. O the *torments* of *hell*! and the *eclip-*
sings of the divine smiles of God, were both
upon him at *once*; the *Devils* assailing of him,
and God forsaking of him, and all at *once*. *My*
God, my God, saith he, *why hast thou forsaken*
me, Mat. 27. 46. now in my greatest extremity;
now *sin* is laid upon me, the *curse* takes hold
on me, the *pains* of *hell* are clasped about me,
and thou hast *forsaken* me. O sad! Sinner, this
was not done in *pretence*, but in *reality*; not in
shew, but in very *deed*; Otherwise Christ had
dissembled, and had not spoken the *truth*; but
the truth of it, his *bloody sweat* declares, his
mighty cries declares, the things what, and for
what he *suffered* declares. Nay, I must say thus
much, that all the *damned souls* in *hell*, with all
their *damnations*, did never yet *feel* that *tor-*
ment and *pain*, that did this *blessed Jesus* in a
little time. Sinner, canst thou read that *Jesus*
Christ was made an *offering* for *sin*, and yet go
on in *sin*? Canst thou hear that the *load* of thy
sins

Christ the Sacrifice of the New Covenant. 141
sins did break the very heart of Christ, and spill his precious Blood? And canst thou find in thy heart to labour to lay more sins upon his back? Canst thou bear that he suffered the pains, the fiery flames of Hell? and canst thou find in thy heart, to add to his groans, by slighting of his sufferings? O hard hearted wretch! How canst thou deal so unkindly with such a sweet Lord Jesus?

Quest. But why did Christ offer himself in sacrifice?

Ans. That thou shouldest not be thrown to the very Devils.

Quest. But why did he spill his precious blood?

Ans. That thou mightest enjoy the joys of Heaven.

Quest. But why did he suffer the pains of Hell?

Ans. That thou mightest not fry with the devil and damned souls.

Quest. But could not we have been saved if Christ had not died?

Ans. No, for without shedding of blood, there is no remission: and besides, there was no death, that could satisfy Gods justice but his, which is evident; because there was none in a capacity to dye, or that was able to answer an infinite God by his so suffering, but he.

Quest. But why did God let him dye?

Ans. He standing in the room of sinners; and that in their names and natures, Gods justice

142 *Christ the Sacrifice of the New Covenant.*

Justice must fall upon *him*; for justice takes vengeance for sin wheresoever it finds it, though it be on his dear *Son*. Nay, God favoured his *Son* no more; finding our sins upon him, then he would have favoured any of *us*: For, should *we* have died? so did *he*. Should *we* have been made a *curse*? so was *he*. Should *we* have undergone the pains of *hell*? so did *he*.

Quest. But did he indeed suffer the torments of *hell*?

Answ. Yea, and that in such an horrible way too, that it is unspeakable.

Quest. Could he not have suffered without his so suffering? would not his dying only of a *natural* death have served the turn?

Answ. No, in no wise: The *sins*, for which he suffered, called for the torments of *hell*; the *condition* in which he *died*, did call for the torments of *hell*; for Christ did not dye the death of a Saint, but the death of a Sinner; of a cursed and damned sinner (because he stood in their rooms, *Gal.* 3. 13.) the Law to which he was subjected, called for the torments of *hell*; the *nature* of Gods justice could not bate him any thing, the *death* which he was to suffer, had not *lost* its *sting*; all these being put together do irresistibly declare unto us, that he as a sacrifice, did suffer the torments of *hell*.

But Secondly, had he not died and suffered the cursed death, the Covenant had been made void,

Christ the Sacrifice of the New Covenant. 143

void, and his suretyship would have been forfeited; and besides this, the world damned in the Flames of Hell fire: therefore his being a sacrifice, was one part of the Covenant; for the terms of the Covenant was, that he should spill his blood, *Zech. 9. 10, 11.* O blessed Jesus! O blessed Grace.

Quest. But why then is his death so slighted by some?

Ans. Because they are enemies to him, either through ignorance, or presumption; either for want of knowledge, or out of malice; for surely, did they love, or believe him, they could not chuse but break, and bleed at heart, to consider and to think of him, *Zech. 12. 10, 11.*

Thus, passing this, I shall now speak something to Christ's Priestly Office: but by the way, if any should think, that I do here spin my thread too long in distinguishing his Priestly Office, from his being a sacrifice; they supposing that for Christ to be a Priest and a Sacrifice is all one and the same thing, and it may be it is; because they have not thought on this so well as they should: Namely, that as he was a sacrifice, he was passive, *Isa. 53.* that is, led; or had away as a lamb to his sufferings: But as a Priest, he was active; that is, he did willingly, and freely give up his body to be a sacrifice. *He hath given his life a ransom for many.* This consideration being with some weight

weight and clearness on my spirit, I was, and am caused to lay them down in two particular heads. And therefore,

The second thing that I would speak something to, it is this; that as there were *Priests* under the first *Covenant*, so there is a Priest under this, belonging to this *New Covenant*; a high Priest, the chief Priest: as it is clear, where it is said, *We having an high Priest over the House of God*, Heb. 10. 21. Chap. 3. 1 Chap. 5. 5, 10. and Chap. 7. 24, 25, 26. Chap. 8. 1, 4.

Now the things that I shall treat upon are these. First, I shall shew you the *Qualifications* required of a Priest under the Law. Secondly, his Office; and thirdly, how Jesus Christ did according to what was signified by those under the Law: I say, how he did answer the *Types*, and where he went beyond them.

For his *Qualifications*.

First, They must be called thereto of God; *No man take this honour upon him, but he that is called of God, as Aaron*, Heb. 5. 4. Now *Aarons* being called of God to be a Priest, signifies, that *Jesus Christ* is a Priest of Gods appointment, such a one that God hath chosen, likes of, and hath set on work, *called of God an high Priest*, &c. ver. 10.

Secondly,

Secondly, The Priests under the Law, they must be men compleat, not deformed; Speak unto Aaron saith God to Moses, saying, Whosoever he be of thy seed in their generations, that hath any blemish, let him not approach to offer the bread of his God: for whatsoever man he be that hath a blemish, he shall not approach (if he be) a blind man, or a lame man, or he that hath a flat nose, or any thing superfluous, or a man that is broken footed, or broken banded, or crooked backe, or a dwarf, or he that hath a blemish in his eye, or be scurvy, or scabbed, or hath his stones broken: No man that hath a blemish of the seed of Aaron the Priest, shall come nigh to offer offerings of the Lord made by fire; he hath a blemish, he shall not come nigh to offer the bread of his God, Levit.

21. 17, 18, 19, 20, 21. What doth all this signifie, but that, in the first place, he must not be lame, to signifie he must not go haltingly about the work of our salvation. 2. He must not be blind, to signifie, that he must not go ignorantly to work, but he must be quick of understanding in the things of God. 3. He must not be scabbed, to signifie, that the Priest must not be corrupt, or filthy in his Office. 4. In a word, he must be every way compleat, to signifie to us, that Jesus Christ was to be, and is most compleat, and most perfect every way, an acceptable high Priest in things pertaining to God, in reference to this second Covenant.

Thirdly, The *Priests* under the Law were not to be *hard hearted*, but *pitiful* and *compassionate*, willing and ready, with abundance of bowels to offer for the people, and to make an *atone-ment* for them, Heb. 5. 1, 2. To *signifie*, that Jesus Christ should be a *tender hearted* high Priest, *able* and *willing* to *sympathize*, and be affected with the *infirmities* of others, to pray for *them*, to offer up for *them* his precious blood; he must be such an one, *who can have compassion on* (a company of poor) *ignorant souls*, and *on them that are out of the way*, to recover *them*, and to set *them* in *safety*, Heb. 4. 15. and that he might thus do, he must be a *man* that had experience of the disadvantages that *infirmity* and *sin* did bring unto these poor creatures, Heb. 2. 17.

Fourthly, The *high Priests* under the Law were not to be *shie* or *squemish*, in case there was any that had the *plague* or *leprosie*, *scab* or *blaun-ches*; but must look on them, go to them, and offer for them (Levit. 13. read that whole Chapter) all which is to *signifie*, that Jesus Christ should not *refuse* to take notice of the *several infirmities*, of his poorest people, but to teach them, and to see that none of them be lost, by reason of their *infirmity*, for want of looking to, or tending, of. This priviledge also have we under this second Covenant. This is the way to make Grace shine.

Fifthly,

Fifthly, The high *Priests* under the *Law*, they were to be anointed with very excellent Oyl, compounded by art (*Exod. 29. 7. Chap. 30. 30.*) to signify, that Jesus the great high *Priest* of this New Covenant, should be in a most eminent way anointed to his *Priestly Office* by the *Holy Spirit* of the Lord.

Sixthly, The *Priests* food and livelihood in the time of his *Ministry*, was to be the consecrated and holy things, *Exod. 29. 33.* to signify, that it is the very meat and drink of Jesus Christ, to do his *Priestly Office*, and to save and preserve his poor tempted and afflicted Saints. O what a New Covenant high Priest have we!

Seventhly, The *Priests* under the *Law*, were to be washed with water, *Exod. 29. 4.* to signify, that Jesus Christ should not go about the work of his *Priestly Office* with the sith of sin upon him, but was without sin to appear as our high Priest in the presence of his Father, to execute his *Priestly Office* there for our advantage. For such a high Priest became us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens, *Heb. 7. 26.*

Eighthly, The high *Priests* under the *Law*, before they went into the holy place, they were to be clothed with a curious garment, a breastplate, and an ephod, and a robe, and a broidered coat, a mitre, and a girdle, and these were to be made of gold and blue, and purple, and

scarlet, and fine linnen; and in this garment and glorious ornaments, there must be precious stones, and on those stones there must be written the names of the children of Israel (read the 28. of Exodus) and all was to signifie what a glorious high Priest Jesus Christ should be; and how in the righteousness of God, he should appear before God as our high Priest, to offer up the sacrifice that was to be offered for our salvation to God his Father: but I pass that.

Now I shall speak to his Office: The Office of the high Priest in general was two-fold. First, *To offer the sacrifice without the Camp.* Secondly, *To bring it within the vail, that is, into the holiest of all, which did type out Heaven.*

First, It was the Office of the Priest to offer the sacrifice, and so did Jesus Christ, he did offer his own body and soul in sacrifice. I say, HE did OFFER it, and not another, as it is written, *No man taketh away my life, but I lay it down of my self; I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again, John 10. 17, 18.* And again it is said, *When he (Jesus) had offered up one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God, Heb. 10. 12.*

Secondly, The Priests under the Law must offer up the sacrifice that God had appointed, and none else, a compleat one without any blemish: and so did our high Priest, where he
saith

saith, *Sacrifice and offerings thou wouldest not, but a body hast thou prepared me, and that will I offer, Heb. 10. 5.*

Thirdly, The Priest was to take of the ashes of the sacrifice, and lay them in a clean place: and this signifies, that the body of Jesus after it had been offered, should be laid into *Josephs sepulchre*, as in a clean place, where never any man before was laid, *Levit. 6. 11.* compared with *John 19. 41, 42.*

This being one part of his office, and when this was done, then in the next place he was to put on the glorious garment, when he was to go into the *holiest*, and take of the blood, and carry it thither, &c. he was to put on the *holy garment*, which signifieth the *righteousness* of Jesus Christ.

Secondly, He was in this *holy garment*, which hath in it the *stones*, and in the *stones* the *names* of the *Twelve Tribes* of the *Children of Israel*, to appear in the holy place, *Exodus 28. And thou shalt take two Onix stones, and shalt grave on them the names of the children of Israel. Six of their names on one stone, and the other six names of the rest on the other stone, according to their birth, ver. 9, 10.* And this was to signifie, that when Jesus Christ was to enter into the holiest, then he was there to bear the names of his elect, in the tables of his heart, before the *Throne of God*, and the *Mercy-seat*, *Heb. 12. 23.*

Thirdly, With this he was to take of the blood of the sacrifices, and carry it into the holiest of all, which was a type of Heaven, and there was he to sprinkle the mercy-seat; and this was to be done by the high Priest only. To signifie, that none but Jesus Christ must have this office and priviledge, to be the peoples high Priest to offer for them. *Heb. 9. 7. But into the second went the high priest alone once every year, yet not without blood, which he offered for himself, and for the errors of the people.*

Fourthly, He was there to make an atonement for the people with the blood, sprinkling of it upon the mercy-seat; but this must be done with much incense, *Levit. 16. And Aaron shall bring the bullock which is for a sin-offering for himself, and for his house, and shall kill the bullock of the sin-offering, which is for himself. And he shall take a censer full of burning coals of fire from off the Altar before the Lord, and his hands full of sweet incense beaten small, and bring it within the veil: And he shall put the incense upon the fire before the Lord, that the cloud of the incense may cover the mercy-seat, that is upon the testimony, that he dye not. And he shall take of the blood of the bullock, and sprinkle it upon the mercy-seat east-ward, and before the mercy-seat shall he sprinkle the blood with his finger seven times.*

times. And then he shall kill the goat of the sin-offering which is for the people, and bring his blood within the vail, and do with that blood as he did with the blood of the bullock, and sprinkle it upon the mercy-seat, and before the mercy-seat, verse 11, 12, 13, 14, 15. Now this was for the priest and the people; all which doth signifie, that Jesus Christ was after his death, to go into heaven it self, of which this holy place was a figure, *Heb. 9.* and there to carry the sacrifice that he offered upon the Cross into the presence of God, for to obtain mercy for the people in a way of justice. And in that he is said to take his hands full of sweet incense, it signifies, that Jesus Christ was to offer up his sacrifice in the presence of his Father, in a way of intercession and prayers.

I might have branched these things out into several particulars, but I would be brief.

I say, therefore the office of the Priests was to carry the blood into the holy place, and there to present it before the mercy-seat, with his heart full of intercessions for the people, for whom he was a Priest, *Luke 1. 8, 9, 10, 11.* This is Jesus Christs work now in the kingdom of glory to plead his own blood, the nature and vertue of it, with a perpetual intercession to the God of mercy, on the behalf of us poor miserable sinners, *Heb. 7. 24.*

Now in the intercession of this Jesus, which

is part of his priestly office, there is these things to be considered for our comfort.

First, There is a pleading of the vertue of his blood, *for them* that are already come in; that they may be kept from the evils of *heresies, delusions, temptations, pleasures, profits*, or any thing of this world, which may be too hard for them. Father, I pray not that thou shouldst take them out of the world (saith Christ) but that thou shouldst keep them from the evil, John 17. 15.

Secondly, in case the devil should aspire up into the presence of God, to accuse any of the poor *Saints*, and to plead their back-slidings against them, as he will do if he can; then there is *Jesus*, our Lord *Jesus*; ready in the Court of Heaven, at the right hand of God, to plead the vertue of his blood; not only for the great and general satisfaction that he did give when he was on the Cross; but also the vertue that is in it now, for the *cleansing*, and *fresh purging* of his poor *Saints*, under their severall temptations and infirmities; as saith the Apostle, *For if when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God, by the death of his Son: much more then being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life; that is, by his intercession, Rom. 5. 10.*

Thirdly, The maintaining of grace, also, is by *Jesus Christs intercession*, being the second part of his Priestly Office. O! had we not a
Jesus

Jesus at the right hand of God, making intercession for us; and to convey fresh supplies of Grace unto us, through the *vertue* of his blood, being pleaded at Gods right hand; how soon would it be with us, as it is with those for whom he prays not at all; *John* 17. 9. But the reason why thou standest, while others fall; the reason why thou goest through the many temptations of the world, and shakest them off from thee; while others are *enslaved*, and *intangled* therein; it is because thou hast an *interceding Jesus*. I have prayed (saith he) that thy faith fail not, *Luke* 22. 32.

Fourthly, It is partly by the *vertue* of *Christs* intercession that the *elect* are brought in; there is many that are to come to Christ, which are not yet brought in to Christ: and it is one part of his work to pray for their salvation too. Neither pray I for these alone; but for all those that shall believe (though as yet they do not believe) on me (but that they may believe) through their word, *John* 17. 20. And let me tell thee soul for thy comfort, who art a coming in to Christ, *panting* and *sighing*, as if thy heart would break; I tell thee soul, thou wouldest never have come to Christ; if he had not first by the vertue of his blood and intercession, sent into thy heart an earnest desire after Christ: and let me tell thee also, that it is his business to make intercession for thee; not only that thou

thou mightest come in, but that thou mightest be preserved, when thou art come in, Compare Heb. 7. 25. with Rom. 8. 33, 34, 35, &c.

Fifthly, It is by the *intercession* of Christ, that the *infirmities* of the *Saints* in their *holy duties* are forgiven: Alas, if it was not for the *priestly office* of Christ Jesus, the prayers, alms, and other duties of the *Saints*, might be *rejected*, because of the *sin* that is in them: but Jesus being our high Priest, he is *ready* to take away the *iniquities* of our holy things, perfuming our prayers with the glory of his own *perfections*: and therefore it is, that there is an answer given to the *Saints* prayers, and also acceptance of their holy duties, Rev. 8. 3, 4. But Christ being come an high Priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect Tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building. Neither by the blood of goats and calves: but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us. * For if the blood of bulls and goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh; How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit, offered himself without spot to God, purge your consciences from dead works to serve the living God? And for this cause he is the Mediator of the New Testament (or Covenant) that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgress-

transgressions that were under the first Testament, they which are called (notwithstanding all their sins) might receive the promise of eternal inheritance, Heb. 9. 11, 12, 13, 14, 15.

The third thing now to be spoken to, it is to shew where, and how *Jesus Christ* out-went, and goes beyond these priests in all their qualifications and offices, for the comfort of poor Saints.

First, They that were called to the priesthood under the Law, were but *men*: but he is both *God* and *Man*, Heb. 7. 28. 3.

2. Their qualifications were in them in a very scanty way: but *Jesus* was every way qualified in an infinite and full way.

They were consecrated but for a time, Heb. 7. 23. but he for ever more, ver. 24.

4. They were made without an oath, ver. 20, 21. but he with an oath.

5. They as *servants*: but he as a *Son*, Heb. 3. 6.

6. Their garments were but such as could be made with hands, Ez. 28. but his the very righteousness of God, Rom. 3. 22.

7. Their offerings were but the body and blood of beasts, and such like, Phil. 3. 8. but his offering was his own body and soul, Heb. 9. 12, 13. Chap. 10. 4, 5. Isa. 53. 10. Heb. 10. 5.

8. Those were but at best but a shadow or type, verse 1. but he the very substance and end of all those Ceremonies, Heb. 9. 10. 11.

9. Their

9. Their *holy* place was but *made by men*, Heb. 9. 24. but his, or that which Jesus is entered, is into *Heaven it self*, Heb. 5. 2, 3.

10. When they went to offer their sacrifice, they were forced to offer for *themselves* as men compassed about with *infirmity*, Heb. 7. 26. but he *holy, harmless*, Heb. 10. 11. who did never commit the least transgression, Heb. 7. 26.

11. They, when they went in to offer, they were fain to do it *standing*, Heb. 10. to signify, that God had no satisfaction therein: but he, *when he had offered one sacrifice for sin, for ever sat down on the right hand of God*, Jer. 12. To signify, that God was very well pleased with his offering.

12. They were fain to offer *often times the sacrifice that could never take away sin*; but he by *one offering hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified*, Heb. 10. 11, 14.

13. Their sacrifices at the best could but serve for the cleansing of the *flesh*, Heb. 9. 13. but his for cleansing both *body and soul*: The blood of *Jesus Christ* doth purge the *conscience* from *dead works* to live a holy life, verse 14.

14. Those high Priests could not offer but *once a year* in the holiest of all, ver. 7. but our high Priest, he *ever liveth* to make intercession for us, Heb. 7. 24, 25.

15. Those high Priests, notwithstanding they were Priests, they were not always to wear

wear their holy garments ; but Jesus never puts them off of him , but is in them *always*.

16. Those high Priests death would be too hard for them , *Heb. 7. 21, 23.* but our high Priest hath *vanquished* and *overcome* that cruel enemy of ours , *Heb. 2. 15.* and brought life and immortality to light, through the glorious Gospel, *2 Tim. 1. 10.*

17. Those high Priests were not able to save themselves ; but this is able to save himself , and all that come to God by him , *Heb. 7. 25.*

18. Those high Priests blood could not do away sin ; but the blood of Jesus Christ , who is our High Priest , *cleanseth us from all sin,* *1 John 1. 7.*

19. Those high Priests sometimes by sin , caused God to reject their sacrifices ; but this high Priest *doth always the things that please him.*

20. Those high Priests could never convey the Spirit by vertue of their sacrifices or office ; but this high Priest , our Lord Jesus , he can , and doth give all the gifts and graces that are given to the sons of men.

21. Those high Priests could never by their sacrifices bring the soul of any sinner to glory , by vertue of it self ; but Jesus hath by one offering (as I said before) perfected for ever those that he did die for. Thus in brief I have shewed in some particulars, how and wherein Jesus
our

our high Priest doth go beyond those high Priests: and many more without question might be mentioned, but I forbear.

A fifth Office of Christ in reference to the second Covenant, it was that he should be the *Fore-runner* again to heaven before his Saints that were to follow after. First, he strikes hands in the Covenant. Secondly, he stands bound as a surety to see every thing in the Covenant accomplished, that was to be done on *his* part; then he brings the *message* from heaven to the world; and before he goeth back, he offereth himself for the same sins that he agreed to suffer for: and so soon as this was done, he goeth post haste to heaven again; not only to exercise the second part of his Priestly Office; but as our *Fore-runner*, to take possession for us, even into heaven it self, as you may see, *Heb. 6. 20.* where it is said, *Whither the forerunner is for us entered.*

First, He is *run* before to open heaven gates: *Be ye open ye everlasting doors, that the King of Glory may enter in.*

Secondly, He is *run* before to take possession of glory in our natures for us.

Thirdly, He is *run* before to prepare *us* our places against we come after, *I go to prepare a place for you, John 14. 1, 2, 3.*

Fourthly, He is *run* thither to make the way easie, in that he hath first trodden the path himself.

Fifthly,

Fifthly, He is *run* thither to receive gifts for us. All spiritual and heavenly gifts had been kept from us, had not Christ so soon as the time appointed was come, run back to the kingdom of glory to receive them for us. But I cannot stand to enlarge upon these glorious things, the Lord enlarge them upon your hearts by meditation.

*The se things
have I spoken
to shew you,
that Saints are
under Grace.*

Here now I might begin to speak of his Prophetical and Kingly Office, and the priviledges that do, and shall come thereby: but that I fear I shall be too tedious, therefore at this time I shall pass them by. Thus you may see how the Covenant of Grace doth *run*, and with whom it was made, and also what was the conditions thereof.

Now then, this Grace, this everlasting Grace of God comes to be free to us through the satisfaction (according to the condipions) given by another for us; for though it be free, and freely given to us, yet the obtaining of it did cost our *Head*, our *Publick-man* a very dear price (1 Cor. 6. 20.) *For ye are bought with a price, even with the precious blood of Christ* (1 Pet. 1. 9.) So it is by another, I say, not by us; yet it is as sure made over to us, even to so many of us as do, or shall believe, as if we had done it, and obtained the grace of God our selves; nay surer; for consider, I say this

160 *Christ compleatly fulfilled the*

this grace is free to us, and comes upon a clear score, by vertue of the labour and purchase of another for us; mark, that which is obtained by another for us, is not obtained for us by our selves: Now, *but Christ hath obtained eternal redemption for us, Heb. 9. 12. not by the blood of goats and calves (which was things offered by men under the Law) but by his own blood (meaning Christs) he entered into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us.*

Secondly, It comes to be *unchangeable* through the perfection of that satisfaction that was given to God through the Son of Mary for us; for whatever the divine, infinite, and eternal justice of God did call for at the hands of man, if ever he intended to be a partaker of the grace of God, this *Jesus*, this one *man*, this publick person, did compleatly give a satisfaction to it, even so effectually; which caused God not only to say, *I am pleased, but I am well pleased, Mat. 3. 17.* Compleatly and sufficiently satisfied with thee on their behalf; for so you must understand it: Mark there these following words, *And having made peace (or compleatly made up the difference) through the blood of his Cross by him, to reconcile all things unto himself; by him, I say, whether they be things in earth, or things in heaven. And you who were sometimes alienated, and enemies in your mind by wicked works; yet now hath he reconciled,*
how

Conditions of the New Covenant. 161

now, *in the body of his flesh, through death, to present you holy; mark, holy and unblameable and unreprouable in his sight, Colof. 1. 41, 22, 23.* And thus it is Grace, unchangeable Grace, to us; because it was obtained, yea compleatly obtained for us, by *Jesus Christ* God-man.

Object. But some may say, how was it possible that one *man* Jesus by one offering, should so compleatly obtain and bring in unchangeable grace for such an *innumerable* company of sinners, as are to be saved.

Ans. First, in that he was every ways fitted for such a work, And secondly, in that, as I said before, he did every ways compleatly satisfy that which was offended by our disobedience to the *former* Covenant. And for the clearing of this.

First, Consider, was it *man* that had offended? He was *man* that gave the satisfaction. *For as by man came death, even so also by man did come the resurrection from the dead, 1 Cor. 15. 21.*

Secondly, Was it God that was offended, he was God that did give a satisfaction. *To us a Child is born, to us a Son is given. — And his name shall be called the mighty God (Isa. 9. 6.) He thought it no robbery to be equal with God: but (for our sakes, 2 Cor. 8. 9.) he made himself of no reputation, &c. Phil. 2. 5, 6, 7.*

Thirdly, For the further clearing of this, to shew you that in every thing he was

M

right.

162 *Christ compleatly felled the*

rightly qualified for this great work; see what God himself saith of him: he calls him in the first place *man*; and secondly he owns him to be his *fellow*, saying, *Awake O sword against my Shepherd, against the man*; mark, *the man that is my fellow*, saith the Lord of Hosts, Zech.

13. 7.

So that now let divine and infinite Justice turn it self which way it will, it finds one that can tell how to match it; for if it say, I will require the satisfaction of man, here is a *man* to satisfy its cry: and if it say, but I am an *infinite* God, and must and will have an *infinite* satisfaction: here is one also that is *infinite*, even fellow with God; *Fellow* in his essence and being, Prov. 8. 23. *Fellow* in his power and strength, 1 Cor. 1. 24. *Fellow* in his Wisdom, see again the same verse. *Fellow* in his mercy and grace, Tit. 2. 10. compared with ver. 11. together with the rest of the attributes of God; so that, I say, let justice turn it self which way it will, here is a compleat person to give a compleat satisfaction: thus much of the fitness of the person.

Secondly, For the compleateness of the satisfaction given by him for us. And that is discovered in these particulars.

First, Doth justice call for the blood of that nature that sinned. Here is the heart blood of Jesus Christ. *We have redemption through his blood,*

Conditions of the New Covenant. 163
blood, Ephes. 1. 14. 1 Pet. 1. 18, 19. Zech. 9.
10, 11.

2. Doth justice say, that this blood, if it be not the blood of one that is *really*, and *naturally* God, it will not give satisfaction to infinite justice; then here is God, *purchasing his Church with his own blood*, Acts 20. 28.

3. Doth justice say, that it must not only have satisfaction for sinners; but they that are saved must be also *washed* and *sanctified* with this blood: Then here is he that so loved us, that he *washed us from our sins in his own blood*, Rev. 1. 5.

4. Is there to be a *righteousness* to cloath them with, that are to be presented before divine justice; then here is the *righteousness* of Christ, which is, *even the righteousness of God by faith*, Rom. 3. 22. Phil. 3. 8, 9, 10.

5. Is there any sins now that will fly upon this Saviour, like so many Lions, of raging Devils, if he take in hand to redeem *man*, he will be content to *bear them all himself alone, even in his own body upon the tree*, 1 Pet. 2. 24.

6. Is there any *Law* now that will *curse*, and condemn this Saviour for standing in our persons, to give satisfaction to God for the transgression of *man*; he will be willing to be *curled*, yea, to be *made a curse for sinners*, rather than they shall be cursed and damned themselves, Gal. 3. 13.

164 *Christ compleatly fulfilled to be*

7. Must the great and glorious God, whose eyes are so pure that he cannot behold iniquity, I say, must he not only have the blood, but the very life of him that will take in hand to be the deliverer, and Saviour of us poor miserable sinners; he is *willing to lay down his life for his sheep*, John 10. 11.

8. Must he not only dye a natural death, but must his soul descend into hell (though it should not be left there) he will suffer that also. *Psal. 16. 10. and Acts 2. 3.*

9. Must he not only be *buried*, but rise again from the *dead*, and overcome *death*, that he might be the *first fruits* to God of them that sleep, which shall be saved. He will be *buried*, and also through the strength of his *God-head*, he will raise himself out of the *grave*, though *death* hold him never so fast, and the Jews lay never such a great stone upon the mouth of the Sepulchre, and seal it never so fast, 1 Cor. 15. 2. Luke 24. 34.

10. Must he carry that *body* into the presence of his Father, to take *possession* of Heaven, Heb. 9. 24. John 14. 2, 3. And must he appear there as a *Priest* (Heb. 6. 20.) as *fore-runner* (ver. the same) as an *Advocate* (1 John 2. 1, 2.) as *Prophet*, as a *Treasure-house*, as an *Interceder*, and *Pleader* of the *Causes* of his *people*; he will be all these, and much more; to the end; the grace of God by faith in Jesus Christ,

Conditions of the new Covenant. 165

Christ, might be made *sure* to all the seed. *Who then can condemn?* it is God that *justifieth*; because Christ hath dyed, yea, rather that is risen again. *Who* (now seeing all this is so effectually done) *shall lay any thing*, the least thing? who can find the least flaw, the least wrinkle, the least defect or imperfection in this glorious satisfaction.

Object. But is it possible that he should so soon give infinite justice a satisfaction, a compleat satisfaction; for the eternal God doth require an eternal lying under the Curse; to the end, he may be eternally satisfied.

Answer. Indeed that which is *infinite*, must have an *eternity* to satisfy God in; that is, they that fall into the prison and pit of utter darkness, must be there to all eternity, to the end, the justice of God may have its full blow at them. But now he that I am speaking of, is God (*Isa.* 9. 6. *2 Tim.* 1. 16. *Heb.* 1. 8, 9. *Phil.* 2. 4, 5, 6. and so is *infinite*: Now he which is true God, is able to give in as little a time an *infinite* satisfaction, as Adam was in giving the *dissatisfaction*. Adam himself might have given *satisfaction* for himself as soon as Christ, had he been very God, as Jesus Christ was: For the reason why the posterity of Adam, even so many of them as fall short of life, must lye *broyl*ing in hell to all eternity, is this; They are not able to give the justice of Gods satisfaction,

166 *Christ compleatly fulfilled the*
faction, they being not infinite, as aforesaid.
But *Christ* (that is *God-man*) being come an
high Priest (that is to offer and give satisfaction)
of good things to come: by a greater and more per-
fect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to
say, not of this building: Neither by the blood of
goats and calves, but by his own; mark you
that, but by his own blood he hath entered into the
holy place, having (already) obtained eternal
redemption for us: But how? For if the blood
of bulls and goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprink-
ling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purging of the
flesh, how much more shall the blood of *Christ*,
who through the eternal Spirit (who through
the power and verue of his infinite Godhead)
offered himself without spot to God, purge your
consciencs from dead works, to serve the living
God? And for this cause (that is, for that he is
God as well as man, and so able to give ju-
stice an infinite satisfaction; therefore) he is
the Mediator of the New Covenant, that by
the means of his death for the redemption of the
transgressions that were under the first testament,
they which are called might receive the promise
of eternal inheritance, Heb. 9. 11, 12, 13, 14,
15. as I said before.

Objection. This is much; but is God contented
with this? Is he satisfied now in the behalf of
sinners by this mans thus suffering? If he is, then
how doth it appear?

Answer.

Ans. It is evident, yea, wonderful evident, that this hath pleased him to the full, as appeareth by these following Demonstrations.

First, In that God did *admit* him into his presence; yea, receive him with joy and *mysick*, even with the sound of a *Trumpet* at his ascension into Heaven (*Psal.* 47. 5.) and Christ makes it an argument to his Children, that *his righteousness* was sufficient, in that he went to his Father, and they *saw* him *no more*, (*Iohn* 16. 10.) *Of righteousness*, saith he; *because I go to my Father, and ye see me no more*: As if he had said, My Spirit shall shew to the world, that I have brought in a sufficient righteousness to justify sinners withal, in that when I go to appear in the presence of my Father on their behalf, he shall give me entertainment, and not throw me down from heaven, because I did not do it sufficient'y.

Again, If you consider the high esteem that God the father doth set on the death of his Son, you will find that he hath received good content thereby. When the Lord Jesus by way of complaint told his Father, that he and his merits were not valued to the worth; his Father answered, *It is a light thing that I should give thee O my servant, to bring Jacob again; I will also give thee for a light to the Gentiles, that thou mayest be for salvation unto the ends of the earth*, *Isa.* 49. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6. As if the Lord

166. *Christ compleatly fulfilled the*
faction, they being not infinite, as aforesaid.
But Christ (that is God-man) *being come an*
high Priest (that is to offer and give satisfaction)
of good things to come: by a greater and more per-
fect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to
say, not of this building: Neither by the blood of
goats and calves, but by his own; mark you
that, but by his own blood he hath entered into the
holy place, having (already) obtained eternal
redemption for us: But how? For if the blood
of bulls and goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprink-
ling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purging of the
flesh, how much more shall the blood of Christ,
who through the eternal Spirit (who through
the power and vertue of his infinite Godhead)
offered himself without spot to God, purge your
consciences from dead works, to serve the living
God? And for this cause (that is, for that he is
God as well as man, and so able to give ju-
stice an infinite satisfaction; therefore) he is
the Mediator of the New Covenant, that by
the means of his death for the redemption of the
transgressions that were under the first testament,
they which are called might receive the promise
of eternal inheritance, Heb. 9. 11, 12, 13, 14,
15. as I said before.

Obj. This is much; but is God contented
with this? Is he satisfied now in the behalf of
sinners by this mans thus suffering? If he is, then
how doth it appear?

Ans.

Conditions of the New Covenant. 167

Ans. It is evident, yea, wonderful evident, that this hath pleased him to the full, as appeareth by these following Demonstrations.

First, In that God did admit him into his presence; yea, receive him with joy and *mysick*, even with the sound of a *Trumpet* at his ascension into Heaven (*Psal.* 47. 5.) and Christ makes it an argument to his Children, that his righteousness was sufficient, in that he went to his Father, and they saw him no more, (*John* 16. 10.) Of righteousness, saith he; because I go to my Father, and ye see me no more? As if he had said, My Spirit shall shew to the world, that I have brought in a sufficient righteousness to justify sinners withal, in that when I go to appear in the presence of my Father on their behalf, he shall give me entertainment, and not throw me down from heaven, because I did not do it sufficiently.

Again, If you consider the high esteem that God the father doth set on the death of his Son, you will find that he hath received good content thereby. When the Lord Jesus by way of complaint told his Father, that he and his merits were not valued to the worth; his Father answered, *It is a light thing that I should give thee O my servant, to bring Jacob again; I will also give thee for a light to the Gentiles, that thou mayest be for salvation unto the ends of the earth,* *Isa.* 49. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6. As if the Lord

had said, My Son, I do value thy death at a higher rate, then that thou shouldest save the Tribes of *Israel* only; behold the Gentiles, the barbarous Heathens, they also shall be brought in as the price of thy blood. It is a light thing that thou shouldest be my servant (only) to bring or redeem the Tribes of *Jacob*, and to restore the preserved of *Israel*; I will give thee for a light to the Gentiles, that thou mayest be my salvation to the ends of the earth.

Again, You may see it also by the carriage of God the Father to all the great sinners to whom mercy was proffered. We do not find that God maketh any objection against them that come to him for the pardon of their sins, because he did want a satisfaction suitable to the greatness of their sins. There was *Manasseh*, who was one that burnt his children in the fire to the devil, *2 Chron.* 33. from 1. to 12. that used witchcraft, that used to worship the host of heaven, that turned his back on the word that God sent unto him: nay, that did worse than the very heathen that God cast out before the children of *Israel*. Also those that are spoken of *Acts* 19. 19. that did spend so much time in conjuration and the like, *Acts* 8. (for such I judge they were) that when they came to burn their books, they counted the price thereof to be fifty thousand pieces of Silver.

Simon

Conditions of the New Covenant. 169

Simon Magus also that was a Sorcerer, and bewitched the whole City, yet he had mercy proffered to him once and again: I say, it was not the greatness of the sins of these sinners; nor of an innumerable company of others that made God at all to object against the salvation of their souls, which justice would have constrained him to, had he not had satisfaction sufficient, by the blood of the Lord Jesus. Nay, further, I do find that because God the Father, would not have the merits of his Son to be undervalued, I say, he doth therefore freely by his consent, let mercy be proffered to the greatest sinners in the first place, for the Jews, that were the worst of men in that day for blasphemy against the Gospel: yet the Apostle proffered mercy to them in the first place. *It is necessary (saith he) that the word of God should first have been spoken unto you,* Acts 13. 46. Acts 3. 26. And Christ gave them commission so to do: for saith he, *Let repentance and remission of sins be preached in my name among all nations, and begin; mark that, begin at Jerusalem,* Luke 24. 47. Let them that but the other day had their hands up to the elbows in my heart blood have the first proffer of my mercy. And saith Paul, *For this cause I obtained mercy, that in me first, Jesus Christ might shew forth all long-suffering, for a pattern to them that should hereafter believe on him to life everlasting,* 1 Tim.

170 *Christ compleatly fulfilled the*

15, 16. As the Apostle saith, those sinners that were dead, possessed with the devil, and the children of wrath, he hath quickned, delivered, and saved, *Ephes. 2. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7. that he might even in the very ages to come shew forth the exceeding riches of his grace in his kindness towards us (and that) through Jesus Christ.*

Secondly, It is evident that that which this man did as a common person, he did it compleatly and satisfactorily, as appears by the openness (as I may so call it) which was in the heart of God to him at his resurrection and ascension. *Ask of me (saith he) and I will give thee the (very) heathen for thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for thy possession, Psal. 2. 8.* And this was at his resurrection, *Acts 13. 33.* Whereas, though he had asked, yet if he had not given a full and compleat satisfaction, justice would not have given him any thing; for justice, the justice of God is so pure, that if it be not compleatly satisfied in every particular, it giveth nothing but curses, *Gal. 3. 10.*

Thirdly, It is yet far more evident that he hath indeed pleased God in the behalf of sinners, in that God hath given him gifts to distribute to sinners, yea the worst of sinners, as a fruit of his satisfaction, and that at his ascension (*Psal. 68. 18.*) Christ hath so satisfied God, that he hath given him all the treasures

Conditions of the New Covenant. 171

treasures both of heaven and earth, to dispose of as he seeth good; he hath so pleased God that he hath given him a *Name*, above every *Name*; a *Scepter*, above every *Scepter*; a *Crown*, above every *Crown*; a *Kingdom* above every *Kingdom*, *Phil. 29. Rev. 19. 16.* he hath given him the highest place in heaven, even his *own right hand*, he hath given him all the power of heaven and earth and under the earth in his *own hand*, to bind whom he pleaseth, and to set free whom he thinks meet; he hath in a word, such an high esteem in the eyes of his Father, that he hath put into his hand, all things that are for the profit of his people, both in this world, and that which is to come; and all this as the fruit of his faithfulness in doing of his work, as the *Mediator* of the New Covenant. *Thou hast ascended on high, thou hast led Captivity Captive, thou hast received gifts; mark, thou hast received them, for men, even for the (worst of men, the) rebellious also.* And hath sent forth some, being furnished with these gifts; some I say, *For the work of the ministry*, to the edifying of them that are already called, and also for the calling in of all those for whom he covenanted with his Father, *Till all come in the unity of faith; &c. Eph. 4. 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13.*

Fourthly, It doth still appear far more evident: For will you hear what the Father himself saith for the shewing of his well-pleas-
edness,

172 *Christ compleatly fulfilled the*
edness, in these two particulars. First, In that
he bids poor souls to hear, and to do as *Christ*
would have them, *Mat. 3. 17. Luke 9. 35.* Se-
condly, In that he resolves to make them that
turn their backs upon him, that dishonour him,
(which is done in a very great measure by those
that lay aside his merits done by himself for
Justification) I say, he that *resolved* to make
them his footstool; where he saith, *Sit thou at*
my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy
footstool. Are they enemies to thee, saith God,
I will be even with them? Do they slight thy
merits? Do they slight thy groans, thy tears,
thy blood thy death, thy resurrection and in-
tercession, thy second coming again in hea-
venly glory? I will tear them, and rend them,
I'll make them as mire in the streets; I will make
thy enemies thy footstool (*Psal. 110. 1. Mat.*
22. 44. Heb. 1. 13. Chap. 10. 13.) I, saith he,
And thou shalt dash them in pieces like a Potters
Vessel, *Psal. 2. 9.* look to it you that slight the
merits of the blood of Christ.

Fifthly, Again further yet; God will make
all the world to know, that he hath been, and
is well pleased in his Son, in that God hath
given (and will make it appear he hath given)
the world to come into his hand, *Heb. 2.* And
that he shall raise the dead, bring them before
his judgment-seat, execute judgment upon
them which he pleaseth to execute judgment
on

on to their damnation; and to receive them to eternal life whom he doth favour, even so many as shall be found to believe in his name and merits (*John* 5. 26, 27, 28.) For as the Father hath life in himself; so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself; And he hath given him authority to execute judgment also; because he is the Son of man — For the hour is coming, that all that are in the graves shall hear his voice; and shall come forth: they that have done good; unto the resurrection of life, and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation. I, and the worst enemy that Christ hath now, shall come at that day with a pale face, with a quaking heart, and bended knees trembling before him, confessing the glory of his merits, and the vertue there was in them to save, to the glory of God the Father, *Romans* 14. 11. *Phil.* 2. 9, 10, 11.

Much more might be added to discover the glorious perfection of this mans satisfaction: but for you that desire to be further satisfied concerning this, search the Scriptures, and beg of God to give you faith and understanding therein: and as for you that slight these things, and continue so doing, God hath another way to take with you, even to dash you in pieces like a Potters vessel; for this hath Christ received of his Father to do unto you, *Rev.* 2. 27.

Thus

Thus I have shewed you in particular, that the Covenant of the grace of God is free and unchangeable to men, that is in that it hath been obtained for men, and that perfectly, to the satisfying of justice, and taking all things out of the way, that were any ways an hinderance to our salvation, *Col. 2. 14.*

The second thing for the discovering of this freeness, and constancy of the Covenant of the Grace of God, it is manifest thus.

First, Whatsoever any man hath of the grace of God, he hath it as a *free gift of God* through Christ Jesus the Mediator of this Covenant, even when they are in a state of enmity to him (mark that, *Rom. 5. 8, 9. Col. 1. 21, 22.*) whether it be Christ as the *foundation stone*, or *faith* to lay hold on him, *Eph. 2. 8. For by Grace you are saved through Faith, and that not of your selves* (not for any thing in you, or done by you for the purchasing of it) *but it is the free gift of God.* And that bestowed on you, even when you were dead in trespasses and sins, *Eph. 2. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9.* Nay if thou hast so much as one desire that is right, it is the gift of God; for of our selves, saith the Apostle, *we are not able to speak a good word, or think a good thought, 2 Cor. 3. 5.*

Was not grace, *absolute grace*, that God made promise to *Adam* after transgression, *Gen. 3. 5.*

Was

Conditions of the New Covenant. 175

Was it not free grace in God to save such a wretch as *Manasseh* was, who used enchantments, witchcraft, burnt his children in the fire, and wrought much evil, 2 *Chron.* 33.

Was it not free grace to save such as those were that are spoken of in the 16 of *Ezekiel*, which no eye pitied.

Was it not free grace for Christ to give *Peter* a loving look after he had cursed and swore, and denied him.

Was it not free grace that met *Paul* when he was a going to *Damascus* to persecute, which converted him, and made him a vessel of mercy.

And what shall I say of such that are spoken of in the /1 *Cor.* 6. 9, 10. speaking there of *fornicators, idolators, adulterers, effeminates, abusers of themselves with mankind, thieves, covetous revilers, drunkards, extortioners*, the basest of sinners in the world, and yet were washed, and yet were justified, was it not freely by grace? O Saints! you that are in Heaven, cry out, We came hither by grace; and you that are on earth, I am sure you cry, if ever we do go thither, it must be freely by grace.

Secondly, In the next place, it appears to be unchangeable in this. First, Because Justice being once satisfied, doth not use to call for the debt again: No, let never such a sinner come

176 *The Covenant of Grace unchangeable.*

to Jesus Christ; and so to God by him; and *Justice* instead of speaking against the salvation of that sinner, it will say, I am just as well as faithful to forgive him his sins, 1 *John* 1. 9. When *Justice* it self is pleased with a man, and speaks on his side, instead of speaking against him, we may well cry out, *Who shall condemn?*

2. Because there is no *Law* to come in against the sinner that believes in Jesus Christ; for he is not under that, and that by right comes in against none, but those that are under it: But Believers are not under *that*, *that* is not their Lord, therefore that hath nothing to do with them; and besides Christs blood hath not only taken away the curse thereof, but also he hath in his own person compleatly fulfilled it as a *publick* person in our stead, *Rom.* 8. 3, 2, 3, 4.

3. The Devil that accused them is destroyed, *Heb.* 2. 14, 15.

4. *Death* and the *Grave*, and *Hell* are overcome, 1 *Cor.* 15. 55. *Hosea* 13. 14.

5. *Sin* that great enemy of mans salvation, that is washed away, *Rev.* 1. 5.

6. The *righteousness* of God is put upon them that believe, and given to them, and they are found in it, *Phil.* 3. 8, 9, 10. *Rom.* 3. 22.

7. Christ is *always* in heaven to plead for them, and to prepare a place for them, *Heb.* 7. 24 *John* 14. 1, 2, 3, 4.

8. He

8. He hath not only promised that he will not leave us, nor forsake us; but he hath also sworn to fulfill his promise. O rich grace! free grace, Lord, who desired thee to promise? Who compelled thee to swear? we use to take honest men upon their bare words. But God willing more abundantly to shew unto the heirs of promise the immutability of his counsel (hath) confirmed it by an oath: that by two immutable things (his promise and his oath) in which it is impossible for God to lye (or break either of them) the might have strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us (Heb. 6. 13, 17, 18.) I'll warrant you God will never break his Oath; therefore we may well have good ground to hope from such a good Foundation as this, that God will never leave us indeed.

1 Again thirdly, Not only thus: but first, God hath begotten Believers again to himself, to be his adopted and accepted Children, in and through the Lord Jesus, 1 Pet. 1. 3.

Secondly, God hath prepared a Kingdom for them, before the Foundation of the world, through Jesus Christ, Mar. 25.

Thirdly, He hath given them an earnest of their happiness, while they live here in this world (Eph. 1. 13, 14.) After ye believed ye were sealed

These things are more fully laid down in that part of the book which containeth the discourse of the privileges of the New Covenant.

178 *The Covenant of Grace unchangeable.*

with the holy Spirit of promise, which is the earnest of our inheritance, until the redemption of the purchased possession to the praise of his glory; and that through this Jesus.

Fourthly, If his Children sin through *weakness*, or by suddain temptation; they *confessing* of it, he willingly forgives, and *heals all their wounds*, reneweth his love towards them, waits to do them good, casteth their sins into the depths of the sea, and all this freely; without any work done by *men as men*. *Not for your sakes do I this, O House of Israel, be it known unto you, saith the Lord, Ezek. 36. 22, 32.* but wholly and alone by the blood of Jesus.

Fifthly, In a word, if you would see it altogether, Gods love was the cause why Jesus Christ was sent to bleed for sinners. Jesus Christs *bleeding* stops the *cries* of divine justice: God looks upon them as compleat in him, gives them to him, as his by right of *purchase*. Jesus ever lives to pray for them that are thus given unto him. God sends his holy Spirit into them, to reveal this to them; sends his *Angels* to minister for them: and all this by verue of an everlasting Covenant between the Father and the Son. *Thrice happy are the people that are in such a case.*

Nay, further he hath made them *Brethren* with Jesus Christ, *members* of his *flesh*, and of his *bones*: the *Spouse* of this Lord Jesus; and
all

all to shew you how dearly, how really, how constantly he loveth us, who by the faith of his operation, have laid hold upon him.

I shall now lay down a few arguments for the superabundant clearing of it, and afterwards answer two or three objections, as may be made against it, and so I shall fall upon the next thing.

First, *God loves the Saints*, as he *loves Jesus Christ*. And *God loves Jesus Christ* with an eternal love; therefore the *Saints* also with the same. *Thou hast loved them, as thou hast loved me*, John 17. 23.

Secondly, That *love* which is *God himself* must needs be *everlasting love*. And that is the love, wherewith God hath loved his *Saints in Christ Jesus*; therefore his love towards his children in Christ must needs be an *everlasting love*. There is none dare say, that the love of God is mixed with a *created* mixture: if not; then it must needs be himself, 1 John 4. 16.

You must not understand that love in God, is a passion as it is in us: but the love of God is the very essence, or nature of God,
1 John 4. 16.

Thirdly, That *love* which is always pitched upon us, in an object as holy as God, must needs be an *everlasting love*. Now the love of God was, and is pitched upon us, through an object as holy as God himself, even our Lord

Jesús: Therefore it must needs be unchangeable.

Fourthly, If he with whom the Covenant of Grace was made, did in every thing, and condition do, even what the Lord could *desire* or *require* of him, that his love might be extended to us, and that for ever; Then his love must needs be an everlasting love, seeing every thing required of us; was compleatly accomplished for us by him: And all this hath our Lord Jesus *done*, and that most gloriously, even on our behalf: therefore it must needs be a love that lasts for ever and ever.

Fifthly, If God hath declared himself, to be the God that *changeth* not, and hath sworn to be *immutable* in his promise, then surely he will be *unchangeable*. And he hath done so: therefore it is *impossible* for God to lie; and so for his eternal love to be unchangeable (*Heb. 6. 13, 14, 17, 18*) Here is an argument of the *Spirit's* own making, who can contradict it? If any object, and say, but still it is upon the condition of *believing*: I answer, the *condition* also is his own *free gift*, and not a qualification arising from the *stock of nature* (*Eph. 2. 8. Phil. 1. 28, 29*). So that here is the love unchangeable, here is also the condition given by him whose love is unchangeable, which may serve yet further for a strong argument, that God will have his love unchangeable. Sinner this is better *felt* and enjoyed, then talked of. *Object.*

Object. But if this love of God be unchangeable in it self; yet it is not unchangeably set upon the *Saints*, unless they behave themselves the better.

Answ. As Gods love at the first was bestowed upon the *Saints*, without any thing foreseen by the Lord in them, as done by them (*Deut.* 9. 4, 5, 6.) So he goeth on with the same, saying, *I will never leave thee nor forsake thee*, *Heb.* 13. 5.

Object. But how cometh it to pass then that many fall off again, from the grace of the Gospel, after a profession of it for some time; some to delusions, and some to their open sins again.

Answ. They are fallen away, not from the everlasting love of God to them; but from the profession of the love of God to them: men may profess that God loves them, when there is no such matter, and that they are the *Children* of God, when the *Devil* is their father; (as it is in *John* 8. 40, 41, 42, 43, 44) Therefore they that do finally fall away from a profession of the grace of the Gospel: It is first, because, they are *Bastards* and not *Sons*. Secondly, Because as they are not *Sons*, so God suffereth them to fall, to make it appear that they are not *Sons*, not of the household of God. *They went out from us, for they were not of us; for if they had been of us, no doubt, mark that, no doubt, saith he, they would have continued with us; but they went out from us, that it might be made manifest*

test that they were not all of us. (1 John 2. 19.)
 And though *Hymeneus* and *Philetus* do throw
 themselves headlong to hell, *Nevertheless the*
Foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal,
the Lord knoweth them that are his, 2 Tim. 2.
17, 18, 19.

Object. But the Scripture saith, that there
 are some that had *Faith*, yet lost it, and have
 made shipwreck of it: Now God loves no longer
 than they believe, as is evident; *For he that be-*
lieves not shall be damned. So then, if some
 may have *Faith*, and yet lose it, and so lose the
 love of God, because they have lost their *Faith*,
 it is evident that Gods love is not so immutable
 as you say it is to every one that believeth.

Ans. There is more sorts of *Faith* than one,
 that is spoken of in *Scripture*.

First, There is a *Faith* that men may have,
 and yet be nothing, none of the Saints of God
 (2 Cor. 13. 1, 2, 3, 4.) and yet may do great
 things therewith.

2. There is a *Faith* that was wrought meer-
 ly by the operation of the miracles that was
 done in those days by Christ and his followers;
And many of the people believed on him. How
 came they by their *Faith*? Why, by the ope-
 ration of the miracles that he did among them;
 for said they, *When Christ cometh, will he do*
more miracles than this man hath done? The
 great thing that wrought their *Faith* in them,
 was

was only by seeing the miracles that he did (*John 7. 31. John 2. 23.*) which is not that saving Faith, which is called the *Faith* of Gods Elect, as is evident: for there must not be only miracles wrought upon outward objects, to beget that, that being too weak a thing, but it must be by the same power that was stretched out in raising Christ from the dead; yea, the exceeding greatness of that power (*Eph. 1. 18, 19.*) So there is a *believing*, being taken with some marvellous work, visible appearing to the outward sense of seeing; and there is a believing that is wrought in the heart, by an invisible operation of the Spirit, revealing the certainty of the satisfaction of the merits of Christ to the soul in a more glorious way, both for certainty and for durableness, both as to the promise and the constancy of it, *Mat. 16. 17, 18.*

3. There is a *Faith* of a mans own, of a mans self also; but the *Faith* of the operation of God (in Scripture) is set in opposition to that; for saith he, *You are saved by Grace through Faith, and that not of your selves;* of your own making, but that which is the free gift of God, *Eph. 2. 8.*

4. We say there is an *Historical Faith*, that is, such as is begotten merely by the History of the Word, not by the Co-operation of the Spirit by the Word.

5. We say there is a *Traditional Faith*, that is, to believe things by Tradition, because others

thers say they believe them ; this is received by *Tradition*, not by *Revelation* ; and shall never be able to stand neither at the *day of Death*, nor at the *day of Judgment* ; though possibly men, while they live here , may esteem themselves and states to be very good, because their heads are filled full of it.

6. There is a Faith that is called (in *Scripture*) a dead *Faith*, the *Faith of Devils*, or of the *Devil* ; they also that have only this , they are like the Devil , and as sure to be damned as he, notwithstanding their *Faith*, if they get no better into their hearts ; for it is far off from enabling of them to lay effectual hold of *Jesus Christ*, and so to put him on for eternal life and sanctification (*Jam* 2. 19, 26.) which they must do if ever they be saved.

But all these are short of the saving *Faith* of *Gods elect*, as is manifest ; I say, First, Because these may be wrought ; and not by that power so exceedingly stretched forth. Secondly, Because these are wrought ; partly ; first, by the sense of seeing ; namely the *miracles* (not by hearing) and secondly, the rest is wrought by a *traditional or historical influence* of the words in their heads, not by an heavenly ; invisible, almighty, and saving operation of the *Spirit of God* in their hearts.

7. I do suppose also, that there is a *Faith* that is wrought upon men through the influence

fluence of those gifts and abilities that God gives sometimes to those that are not his own by election, though by creation: my meaning is some men finding that God hath given them very great gifts and abilities; as to the gifts of *preaching, praying, working miracles*, or the like; I say, they therefore do conclude, that God is their *Father*, and they his *Children*; the ground of which confidence is still begotten, not by the glorious operation of the spirit, but by a considering of the great gifts that God hath bestowed upon them, as to the things before mentioned.

As thus, First, The poor soul considering how ignorant it was, and now how knowing it is. Secondly, Considering how vain it formerly was, and also now how civil it is, presently makes this *conclusion*, surely God loves me, surely he hath made me one of his, and will save me. This is now a wrong faith, as is evident, in that it is placed upon a wrong object; for mark, this faith is not placed assuredly on God's grace alone, through the blood and merits of Christ, being discovered effectually to the soul, but upon God through those things that God hath given it; as of gifts, either to *preach or pray, or great works, or the like*, which will assuredly come to nought, as sure as God is in *Heaven*; if no better faith and ground of faith be found out for thy soul savingly to rest upon.

As

As to the second cause of the *Objection*, which runs to this effect. God loves men upon the account of their *believing*. I answer, that God loves men before they *believe*, he loves them, he calls them, and gives them faith to believe. *But God who is rich in grace, with his great love, wherewith he loved us* (when? when we believed or before) *even when we were dead in our sins* (and so far off from believers) *bath quickned us together with Christ, by grace you are saved*, Eph. 2. 4, 5.

Now also I suppose that thou wilt say in thy heart, I would you would shew us then, what is saving faith, which thing it may be I may touch upon a while hence, in the next thing that I am to speak unto. O they that have that are safe indeed!

The Second Thing.

THe second Thing that I am to speak unto is this: Who they are that are actually brought into this free and unchangable grace; and also how they are brought in.

Answ. Indeed now we are come to the pinch of the *whole discourse*; and if God do but help me to run rightly thorow this, as I do verily believe he will, I may do thee, *Reader*, good and bring glory to my God.

The Question containeth these two branches.
First,

brought into the New Covenant. 187

First, who are brought in. Secondly, how they are brought in: the first is quickly answered. Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners, Jewish sinners, Gentile sinners, Old sinners, Young sinners, great sinners, the chiefest of sinners, 1 Tim. 1. 14, 15. Rom. 5. 7, 8, 9, 10. 1 Cor. 6. 9, 10. Mat. 21, 31. Publicans and Harlots, that is, Whores and Cheaters, Exactors, shall enter into the Kingdom of Heaven. For I came not (saith Christ) to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance, Mark 2. 17.

A sinner in the Scripture is described in general to be a transgressor of the Law, 1 John 3. 4. *Whoever committeth sin transgresseth the Law; for sin is the transgression of the Law.*

But particularly, they are described in a more particular way, as first, such as in whom dwelleth the devil, Ephes. 2. 2, 3. Secondly, such as will do the service of him, John 8. 44. Thirdly, such as are enemies to God, Col. 1. 21. Fourthly, such as are 1 Cor. 6. 9, 10. 2 Chron. 33. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, &c. Acts 9. 1, 2, 3. 1 Tim. 1. 14, 15, 16. Acts 19. 19. Acts 2. 36, 37. Drunkards, Whoremasters, Liars, Perjured Persons, Covetous, Revilers, Extortioners, Fornicators, Swearers, possessed with Devils, Thieves, Idolaters, Witches, Sorcerers, Conjurers, Murderers, and the like; these be sinners, and such sinners that God hath prepared Heaven, Happiness, Pardon of Sin, and an inheritance

188 *Who, and how men are actually*

Inheritance of God, with Christ, with Saints, with Angels, if they do come in, and accept of Grace, as I might prove at large: For Gods grace is so great, that if they do come to him by *Christ*, presently all is forgiven them; therefore never object, that thy sins are too great to be pardoned: but *come taste and see how good the Lord is to any who severer comes unto him.*

The second thing is, How are these brought into this everlasting Covenant of Grace?

*Come to the
conjunctions sin-
ner.*

2. *Ans.* When God doth indeed and in truth bring in a *sinner* into this most blessed Covenant (for so it is) he usually goeth this way.

First, He slays or kills the party to all things besides himself, and his Son Jesus Christ, and the comforts of the Spirit.

For the clearing of this, I shall shew you, first, with what God kills: secondly, how God kills; and thirdly, to what God kills those whom he makes alive in Jesus Christ.

For the first, When God brings *sinners* into the Covenant of Grace, he doth first kill them with the Covenant of Works, which is the Moral Law, or Ten Commandments. This is *Pauls* Doctrine, and also *Pauls* experience. It is his Doctrine where he saith, *The ministration of death engraven in stones, the ministration of condemnation* (which is the Law, in that place called the *Letter*) kills, 2 Cor. 3. 6, 7, 8, 9.

The

brought into the New Covenant. 189

The Letter (saith he) killeth, or the Law; or the ministrati^on of death, which in another place is called a sound of words, Heb. 12. 19. because they have no life in them, but rather death and damnation, through our inability to fulfill them (Rom. 8. 3.) doth kill, 2 Cor. 6.

Secondly, It is his experience, where he saith, *I was alive once* (that is, to my own things, *Phil. 3. 7, 8, 9, 10.*) *without the Law* (that is, before God did strike him dead by it) *but when the commandment came* (that is, to do and exercise its right Office on me, which was to kill me, then) *sin revived, and I died*, (and I was killed) *and the commandment* (or the Law) *which was ordained to be unto life, I found to be unto death: For sin taketh occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and thereby slew me,* Rom. 7. 9, 10, 11. And indeed to speak my own experience, together with the experience of all the Saints, they can seal with me to this, more or less.

Quest. But how doth God kill with this Law or Covenant?

Ans. First, by opening to the soul the spirituality of it; *The Law is spiritual* (saith he) *but I am carnal, sold under sin,* Rom. 7. 14. Now the spirituality of the Law is discovered this way.

First, by shewing to the soul, that every sinful thought is a sin against it. Ifinner, when
the

120 *Who, and how men are actually*
the Law doth come home indeed upon thy
soul in the spirituality of it, it will discover
such things to thee to be sins, that now thou
lookest over, and regardest not; that is a re-
markable saying of *Paul*, when he saith, *Sin*
revived, and *I died*; sin revived, saith he, as if
he had said, those things that before I did not
value nor regard, but looked upon them to be
trifles, to be dead and forgotten; but when
the Law was fastened on my soul, it did so
raise them from the dead, call them to mind,
so muster them before my face, and put such
strength into them, that I was over-mastered
by them, by the guilt of them. *Sin revived*,
by the commandment, or my sins had mighty
strength, life, and abundance of force upon
me, because of that; insomuch, that it killed
me, *Mat. 5. 28.*

Secondly, It sheweth that every such sin de-
serveth eternal damnation (Friends, I doubt
there be but few of you that have seen the spi-
rituality of the Law of Works, but) this is one
thing in which it discovereth its Spirituality,
and this is the proper work of the Law.

Thirdly, God with a discovery of this doth
also discover his own Divine and Infinite Ju-
stice (of which the Law is a description) which
backs what is discovered by the Law; and that
by discovering of its Purity and Holiness, to be
so divine, so pure, so upright, and so far off
from

brought into the New Covenant. 191

from winking at the least sin, that he doth by that Law, without any favour, condemn the sinner for that sin, Gal. 3. 10. Now when he hath brought the soul into this Premunition, into this puzzle: Then,

2. He sheweth to the soul the nature and condition of the Law, as to its dealing with, or forbearing of the sinner, that hath sinned against it: which is to pass an eternal curse upon both soul and body, of the party so offending, saying to him, *Cursed be the man, that continueth not in every thing that is written in the book of the Law to do it*: for saith the Law, this is my proper work. First, to shew thee thy sins, and when I have done that, then in the next place to condemn thee for them, and that without all remedy, as from me, or any thing within my bounds; for I am not to save any, to pardon any, nay, not to favour any in the least thing that have sinned against me: for God did not send me to make alive, but to discover sin, and to condemn for the same. Now so soon as this is presented to the conscience, in the next place, the Law also by this Law doth shew that now there is no righteous act, according to the tenor of that Covenant, that can reprove him, or take him off from all this horrour and curse that lies upon him; because that is not an administration of pardon (as I said before) to forgive the sin; but an admini-

192 *Who, and how men are actually*
administration of damnation; because of transgression. O the very discovery of this, striketh the soul into a deadly swoon, even above half dead. But when God doth do the work indeed; he doth in the next place shew the soul that he is the man that is eternally under this *Covenant* by nature, and that it is thee that hath sinned against this *Law*, and doth by right deserve the curse and displeasure of the same; and that all that ever he can do will not give satisfaction to that glorious justice that did give this *Law*; holy actions, tears of blood, telling all, and giving to the poor, or whatever else can be done by thee, it comes all short, and is all to no purpose (*Phil. 3.*) I'll warrant him, he that seeth this, it will kill him to that which he was alive unto before, though he had a thousand lives. Ah sinners, sinners, were you but sensible indeed of the severity and truth of this, it would make you look about you to purpose. O how would it make you strive to stop at that, that now you drink down with delight? How many Oaths would it make you bite asunder? nay, it would make you bite your *tongues*, to think that they should be used as instruments of the Devil, to bring your souls into such an unspeakable misery; then also, we should not have you hang the salvation of your souls upon such slender pins.

as now you do : no, no, but you would be in another mind then. O then we should have you cry out, I must have Christ, what shall I do for Christ? how shall I come at Christ? would I was sure, truly sure of Christ, my soul is gone; damned; cast away, and must for ever burn with the Devils; if I do not get precious *Jesus Christ*.

In the next place, when God hath done this, then he the further shews the soul, that Covenant which it is under by nature, is distinct from the Covenant of Grace; and also they that are under it, are by nature without any of the *graces*, which they have that are under the Covenant of Grace: As First, That it hath no faith, *John 16. 9.* Secondly, no hope, *Eph. 2. 12.* Thirdly, Nor none of the spirit to work these things first by nature. Fourthly, Neither will that Covenant give to them any peace with God. Fifthly, No promise of safeguard from his revenging *Law*, by that Covenant. Sixthly, But lieth by Nature liable to all the *curse* and *condemnings*, and *thunder-claps* of this most *fery Covenant*. Seventhly, That it will accept of no sorrow, no repentance, no satisfaction, as from *thee*. Eighthly, That it calls for no less than the shedding of *thy blood*. Ninthly, The *damnation* of *thy soul* and *body*. Tenthly, And if there be any thing proffered to it by *thee*, as to the making of it amends, it
O throws

throws it back again as dirt in *thy face*, slighting all that *thou* canst bring.

Now when the *soul* is brought into this condition, then it is indeed dead; *killed* to that, to which it was once alive.

And therefore in the next place to shew you to what it is, *killed*; and that is first to sin: O it dares not *sin*! it sees hell fire is prepared for them that *sin*: Gods Justice will not spare it if it live in *sin*: the *Law* will damn it, if it live in *sin*; the *Devil* will have it, if it follow its *sin*: O I say, it trembles at the very thoughts of *sin*; I, if *sin* do but offer to tempt the *soul*, to draw away the *soul* from God, it cries, it sighs, it shunneth the very appearance of *sin*, it is odious unto it. If God would but serve you thus that love your pleasures, you would not make such a trifle of *sin*, as you do.

Secondly, It is *killed* to the *Law* of God, as it is the *Covenant of Works*: O saith the *soul*, the *Law* hath killed me to its self, *I through the Law am dead to the Law* (Gal. 2. 19.) The *Law* is another thing then I did think it was; I thought it would not have been so *soul-destroying*, so *damning* a *Law*; I thought it would not have been so *severe* against me for *my little sins*, for *my playing*, for *my jeasting*, for *my dissembling*, quarrelling, and the like: I had some *thoughts* indeed, that it would tew *great sinners*, but let me pass; and though it con-
demned

denned great sinners, yet it would pass me by: but now would I were free from this Covenant, would I were free from this Law. I will tell thee, that a soul thus worked upon, is more afraid of the Covenant of *Works*, then he is of the *Devil*; for he sees it is the Law that doth give him up into *his hands* for *sin*: and if he was but clear from that, he should not greatly need to fear the *Devil*. O now every particular *command* tears the caul of his heart; now every *command* is as a great gun well charged against his *soul*; now he sees he had as good run into a *fire* to keep himself from *burning*, as to run to the *Law* to keep himself from *damning*; and this he sees really, I, and feels it too, to his own sorrow and perplexity.

Thirdly, The soul also now is *killed* to his own *righteousness*, and counts that but dung, but dross, not worth the dirt hanging on shoes. O then says he, Thou *filthy righteousness* (Isa. 64. 6.) how hast thou deceived me? How hast thou *beguiled* my poor soul? How did I deceive my self with giving of a little *alms*? with abstaining from some *gross pollutions*? with *walking* in some *ordinances*, as to the outside of them? How hath my good words, good *thinkings*, good *meanings* (as the world calls them) deceived my *ignorant soul*? I want the *righteousness* of *faith*, the *righteousness* of *God*; for I see now there is no less will do me any good.

Fourthly, It is also *killed to its own faith, its notion of the Gospel, its own hope, its own repentings, its own promises and resolutions to its own strength, its own vertue, or whatsoever it had before: now faith the soul, That faith I thought I had, it is but fancy; that hope I thought I had, I see it is but hypocritical, but vain and groundless hope: now the soul sees it hath by nature no saving faith, no saving hope, no grace at all by nature, by the first Covenant. Now it crieth out, How many promises have I broken? and how many times have I resolved in vain? when I was sick at such a time, and in such a streight, at such a place. Indeed I thought my self a wise man once, but I see my self a very fool now: O how ignorant am I of the Gospel now? and of the blessed experience of the Work of God on a Christians heart? In a word, it sees it self beset by nature with all evil, and destitute of all good, which is enough to kill the stoutest, hardest hearted sinner that ever lived on the earth. O Friends! should you be plainly dealt withal, by this discovery of the dealing of God with a sinner, when he makes him a Saint, and would seriously try your selves thereby (as God will try you one day) how few would there be found of you, to be so much as acquainted with the work of God in the *Notion*? much less in the experimental knowledge of the same. And indeed*

indeed God is fain to take this way with sinners, thus to kill them, with the Old Covenant, to all things below a crucified Christ.

First, Because otherwise there would be none in the world that would look after this sweet Jesus

*Six reasons
of this dis-
course.*

Christ. There is but a few that go to *Heaven* in all (comparatively) and them few, God is fain to deal with them in this manner, or else his *Heaven*, his *Christ*, his *Glory*, and *everlasting Happiness* must abide by themselves for all sinners. Do you think that *Manasseh* would have regarded the *Lord*, had he not suffered his *enemies* to have prevailed against him, 2 *Chron.* 33. from the 1. verse to the 16. *Jer.* 31. 18. Do you think that *Ephraim* would have looked after *salvation*, had not God first confounded him with the guilt of the sins of his youth? What do you think of *Paul*, *Acts* 9. 4, 5, 6. What do you think of the Jailour, *Acts* 16. 30, 31, 32. What do you think of the Three Thousand, *Acts* 2. 36, 37. Was not this the way that the *Lord* was fain to take to make them close in with *Jesus Christ*? Was he not fain to kill them to every thing below a *Christ*, that they were driven to their wits ends? into much that they were forced to cry out, *What shall we do to be saved?* I say, God might keep *Heaven* and *Happiness* to himself, if he should not go this way to work with sinners. O stout hearted rebels! O tender hearted God! Se-

198 *Who, and how men are actually*

Secondly, Because then, and not till then, will sinners accept of *Jesus Christ* on Gods terms. So long as *sinners* can make a life out of any thing below *Christ*, so long they will not close with *Christ* without indenting: but when the *God of Heaven* hath killed them to every thing below himself, and his Son; then *Christ* will down on any terms in the world. And indeed this is the very reason, why *sinners* when they hear of *Christ*, yet will not close in with him, there is something that they can take content in besides him. The prodigal so long as he could content himself with the husks that the swine did eat, so long he did keep away from his *Fathers House*, but when he could get no nourishment any where on this side of his *Fathers House*, then (saith he) and not till then, *I will arise and go to my Father, &c.*

I say, This is the reason therefore why men come no faster, and close no realier with the *Son of God*, but stand halting and indenting about the terms they must have *Christ* upon; for saith the drunkard, I look on *Christ* to be worth the having; but yet I am not willing to lose ALL for him, all but my pot saith the drunkard, and all but the world saith the covetous. I will part with any thing but lust and pride, saith the wanton; but if *Christ* will not be had without, I forsake all, cast away all; then it must be with me as it was with the young man in the Gospel.

Gospel, such news will make me sorry at my very heart.

But now when a man is soundly killed to all his sins, to all his *righteousness*, to all his *comforts* whatsoever, and sees that there is no way but the *Devil* must have him, but he must be *damned* in *hell*, if he be not clothed with *Jesus Christ*; Oh! then (saith he) give me *Christ* on any *terms* whatsoever he cost: though he cost me *friends*, though he cost me *comforts*, though he cost me all that ever I have; yet like the wise *Merchant* in the *Gospel*, they will sell all to get that pearl. I tell you when a *soul* is brought to see its want of *Christ* aright, it will not be kept back, *Father*, *Mother*, *Husband*, *Wife*, *Lands*, *Living*s, nay, *life* and all shall go, rather then the *soul* will miss of *Christ*. I, and the *soul* counterth *Christ* a cheap *Saviour*, if it can get him vpon any *terms*, now the *soul* indents no longer. Now *Lord* give me *Christ*, upon any *terms* whatsoever he cost; for I am a *dead man*, a *damned man*, a *cast away*, if I have not *Christ*. What say you, O you *wounded sinners*? Is not this true as I have said? would you not give Ten thousand worlds if you had so many, so be you might be well answered, that your sins shall be pardoned, and your *souls* and *bodies* justified and glorified, at the coming of the *Lord Jesus Christ*.

Thirdly, The Lord goeth this way for this reason also, that it might make the soul sensible what it cost Christ to redeem it from death and hell. When a man cometh to feel the sting and guilt of sin, death and hell, upon his *conscience*, then, and not till then, can he tell what it cost *Christ* to *redeem sinners*. O! saith the soul if a few *sins* are so terrible, and lay the soul under such *wrath* and *torment*, what did *Christ* undergo? who bare the sins of Thousands, and Thousands, and all at once.

This also is one means to make *souls* tender of sin (it is the *burned child* that feareth the *fire*) to make them humble in a *sense* of their own *vileness*, to make them count every thing that God giveth them a mercy, to make much of the least glimpse of the love of God, and to prize it above the whole world. O sinners were you killed indeed, then *Heaven* would be *Heaven*, and *Hell* would be *Hell* indeed; but because you are not wrought upon in this manner, therefore you count the ways of God, as bad as a good man counteth the ways of the devil, and the ways of the devil and hell as good as a Saint doth count the ways of God.

Fourthly, Again, God is fain to go this way, and all to make sinners make sure of *Heaven*. So long as souls are senseless of sin, and what a *damnable state* they are in by nature, so long they

they will even dally with the *Kingdom of Heaven*, and the *Salvation* of their own *poor souls*: but when God cometh and sheweth them where they are, and what is like to become of them if they miss of the *Crucified Saviour*; Oh then, saith the soul, would I were sure of *Jesus*; what shall I do to get assurance of *Jesus*? And thus is God forced, as I may say, to whip souls to *Jesus Christ*, they being so secure, so senseless, and so much their own enemies as not to look out after their own eternal advantage.

Fifthly, A fifth reason why God doth deal thus with *sinners*, it is because he would bring *Christ* and the *Soul* together in a *right way*. *Christ* and *Sinners* would never come together in a beloved posture, they would not so suitably suit each other, if they were not brought together this way, the sinner being *killed*.

O when the sinner is *killed*, and indeed struck dead to every thing below a *naked Jesus*, how suitably then doth the *Soul* and *Christ* suit one with another. Then here is a *naked sinner* for a *righteous Jesus*, a *poor sinner* to a *rich Jesus*, a *weak sinner* to a *strong Jesus*, a *blind sinner* to a *seeing Jesus*, an *ignorant, careless sinner* to a *wise and careful Jesus*. O how wise is God in dealing thus with the *sinner*, he strips him of his own knowledge, that he may fill him with *Christs*; he *killeth* him for taking pleasure in *sin*, that he may take pleasure in *Jesus Christ*, &c.

Sixthly,

202 *Who, and how men are actually*

Sixthly, But sixthly, God goeth this way with *sinners* because he would have the *glory* of their *salvation*. Should not men and women be *killed* to their own things, they would do *sacrifice* unto them, and instead of saying to the Lamb, *THOU ART WORTHY*, Rev. 5. 9. Job. 40. 14. Rom. 3. 27. Ephes. 2. 8, 9. Tit. 3. 5. they woul say their own *arm*; their own *right hand* hath saved them: but God will cut off *boasting* from ever entring within the *borders* of *eternal glory*: for he is resolved to have the *glory* of the *beginning*, the *middle*, and the *end*, of the *contriving* and *saving*, and giving *salvation* to them that enter into the joys of everlasting glory. *That they may be called the trees of righteousness, the planting of the Lord, that he may be glorified*, Isa. 61. 3. I might have run thorow many things as to this: but I shall pass them, and proceed.

That soul that hath the right work of God upon its heart, is not only killed to its self: but also made alive to Christ.

Now Secondly, The soul being thus *killed* to it's self, its sins, its righteousness, faith, hope, wisdom, promises, resolutions, and the rest of its things which it trusted in by nature. In the next place, it hath also given unto it a most glorious, perfect, and never-fading life, which is first a life imputed to it: yet so really that the very thought of it in the soul hath so much operation and authori-

ty, especially when the *meditation* of it is mixed with faith, as to make it (though *condemned* by the *Law*, to triumph, and to look its enemies in the face with comfort; notwithstanding the greatness of the *multitude*, the fierceness of their *anger*, and the continuation of their *malice*, be never so hot against it.

This imputed life (for so it is) is the obedience of the Son of God, as his righteousness, in his suffering, arising, ascending, interceding, and so consequently triumphing over all the enemies of the soul, and given to me, as being wrought on purpose for me. So that, is it there righteousness in Christ? that is mine: Is there perfection in that righteousness? that is mine: did he bleed for sin? it was for mine: Hath he overcome the Law, the Devil, and Hell? the victory is mine, and I am counted the Conqueror; *Nay, more than a conqueror through him that hath loved me*: and I do count this a most glorious life; for by this means it is that I am in the first place proclaimed both in *Heaven* and *Earth* guiltless, and such a one, who, as I am in Christ, am not a sinner, and so not under the Law, to be condemned, but as holy and righteous as the Son of God himself, because he himself is my holiness and righteousness, and so likewise having by this all things taken out of the way that would condemn me.

Some-

Sometimes I bleis the *Lord*, my *soul* hath had the life that now I am *speaking* of, not only *imputed* to me, but the very *glory* of it upon my *soul*: For upon a time when I was under many *condemnings* of heart, and feared because of my *sins*, my *soul* would miss of *eternal glory*; methought I felt in my *soul* such a secret motion as this, '*Thy righteousness is in Heaven*, together with the *splendour* and *shining* of the *spirit* of *grace* in my *soul*, which gave me to see clearly, that my *righteousness* by which I should be *justified* (from all that could condemn) was the *Son of God himself* in his own person now at the right hand of his *Father*, representing me *complete* before the *mercy-seat* in his own self: so that I saw clearly, that night and day, where ever I was, or what ever I was a doing, still there was my *righteousness* just before the *eyes* of *divine glory*; so that the *Father* could never find fault with me for any *insufficiency* that was in my *righteousness*, being it was *complete*; neither could he say, where is it? because it was continually at his *right hand*.

Also at another time having *contracted* *guilt* upon my *soul*, and having some *distemper* of *body* upon me, supposed that death might now so *seize* upon, as to take me away from among men: then thought I what shall I do now? is all *right* with my *soul*? have I the *right work* of *God* on my *soul*? Answering my self, No sure-

ly

ly, and that because there were so many *weaknesses* in me; yea so many *weaknesses* in my best duties: for thought I, how can such a one as I find mercy, whose heart is so ready to evil, and so backward to that which is good (so far as it is *natural*) Thus musing, being filled with fear to die, these words came in upon my soul, *Being justified freely by his grace, through the redemption which is in Christ*; as it God had said, Sinner, thou thinkest because thou hast had so many *infirmities* and *weaknesses* in thy soul whilst thou hast been professing of me, therefore now there can be no hopes of mercy, but be it known unto thee, that it was not any thing done by thee at the first, that moved me to have mercy upon thee; neither is it any thing that is done by thee now that shall make me either accept or reject thee; behold my *Son* who standeth by me, he is *righteous*, he hath fulfilled my *Law*, and given me *good satisfaction*; on him therefore do I look, and on thee only as thou art in him, and according to what he hath done, so will I deal with thee: This having stayed my heart, and taken off the guilt through the strength of its coming on my soul, anon after came in that word as a second testimony: *He hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to the works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his own purpose and grace which was*
given

206 *Who, and how men are actually given us in Christ Jesus before the world began.*

And thus is the sinner made alive from the dead, being justified by Grace through the righteousness of Christ which is unto all and upon all them that believe according to the Scriptures. *And the life that I now live, it is by the faith of the Son of God; who loved me, and gave himself for me, Gal. 2. 20. I lay down my life for my sheep, John 10. 10, 15. I am come that you might have life, and that you might have it more abundantly. For if while we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son; much more then being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life, Rom. 5. 10, 21. That as sin reigneth unto death, even so might Grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life, by Jesus Christ our Lord.*

Secondly, This life is not only imputed to him that is wrought on by the spirit of Grace, that is not only counted his; but also there is put into the soul an understanding enlightened on purpose to know the things of God, which is Christ and his imputed righteousness (1 John 5. 20.) which it never thought of nor understood before (1 Cor. 2. 9, 10, 11.) which *understanding* being enlightened, and made to see such things that the soul cannot be contented without it lay hold of, and apply Christ unto it self, so effectually; I say that
the

brought into the New Covenant. 207

the soul shall be exceedingly revived in a very heavenly measure, with the application of this imputed righteousness; for thereby it knoweth it shall find God speaking peace to its self, and with a fatherly affection say, *Be of good cheer, thy sins are forgiven thee*, the righteousness of my Son I bestow upon thee: *For what the Law could not do in that it was weak through the (thy) flesh, I have sent forth my only Son, and have condemned thy sins in his flesh*, Rom. 8.3-4. And though thou hast gone astray like a lost sheep, yet on him I have laid thine iniquities; and though thou thereby didst undo and break thy self forever, yet by his stripes I have healed thee. Thus I say the Lord causeth the soul by faith to apply that which he doth by grace impute unto it (for thus every soul more or less is dealt withal) the soul being thus enlightened, thus quickened, thus made alive from that dead state it was in before (or at least having the beginnings of this life) it hath these several vertuous advantages, which they have not that are dead in their sins and trespasses, and under the Law.

First, It seeth what a sad condition all men by nature are in, they being in that state which it self was in but a while since: but now by grace it is a beginning to scrabble out of it; now it seeth the whole world lieth in wickedness (1 John 5. 19.) and so liable to eternal vengeance;

208 *Who, and how men are actually*
vengeance & because of their *wickedness*. Ah
friends, let me tell you, though you may be
ignorant of your *state* and *condition*, yet the
poor *groaning*, *hungering* Saints of God do see
what a sad, woeful, miserable state you are in,
which sometimes makes them tremble to think
of your most lamentable latter end (you dying
so) and also to * *flie*

* *Like as the Children*
of Israel, who fled for
fear, when the ground o-
pened its mouth to swal-
low up Corah and his
company, Ps. 103. 1. 2 3.

the faster to their Lord
Jesus, for very fear that
they also should be par-
takers of that most dole-
ful doom: and this it hath
by vertue of its own ex-
perience, knowing its self was but a while a-
go in the same *condition*, under the same *con-*
demnation. O! there is now a hearty blessing
of God that ever he should shew to it its sad *con-*
dition, and that he should incline its heart to
seek after a better condition. O blessed be the
Lord! saith the soul, that ever he should awaken
me, stir up *me*, and bring *me* out of that sad
condition, that I once with them was in. It makes
also the soul to wonder to see how foolishly
and vainly the rest of its *neighbours* do spend
their precious time, that they should be so void
of *understanding*, so forgetful of their latter end,
so senseless of the *dammning nature* of their sins:
O that their eyes was but enlightened to see
whereabouts they are! surely they would be
of

of another mind then they are now in. Now the soul wonders to see what slender pins those poor *creatures* do hang the strels of the *eternal salvation* of their souls upon. O methinks! saith the soul; it makes me *mourn* to see that some should think that they were Born *Christians*, and others that their *Baptisme* makes them so, others depending barely upon a *traditional, historical faith*, which will leave their souls in the midst of perplexity. O that they should trust to such *fables, fancies*, and wicked flights of the *Devil*, as their good doings, their good thinkings, their civil walking, and living with the world. O miserable profession, and the end thereof will be a miserable end.

But now, vvhhen the soul is thus vvrought upon, it must be sure to look for the very gates of hell to be set open against it, vvith all their force and might to destroy it. Nowv hell rageth, the devil roareth, and all the world resolved do be the best they can, to bring the soul again into bondage and ruine. Also the soul shall not want enemies, even in its own hearts lust, as covetousness, adultery, blasphemy, unbelief, hardness of heart, coldness, half-heartedness, ignorance, with an innumerable company of attendants, hanging like so many blocks at its heels, ready to sink it into the fire of hell every moment, together

210 *Who, and how men are actually*

with strange apprehensions of God and Christ, as if now they were absolutely turned to be its *enemies*, which maketh it doubt of the certainty of its *salvation*: For you must understand, that though a soul may in reality have the *righteousness* of the *Son of God* imputed to it, and also some *faith* in a very strong manner to lay hold upon it: yet at another time, through *temptation* they may fear and doubt again; insomuch that the *soul* may be put into a very great fear, lest it should return again into the condition it once was in, *Jer. 32 40*. O faith the soul when I think of my former state, how *miserable* it was, it makes me tremble; and when I think that I may fall into that *condition* again, how sad are the thoughts of it to me? I would not be in that *condition* again for all the world: and this fear riseth still higher and higher, as the soul is sensible of *Satans temptations*, or of its *working* of its own *corruptions*. Ha! these filthy lusts, these filthy corruptions, O that I was rid of them, that they were consumed in a moment, that I could be quite rid of them, they do so disturb my soul, dishonour my God, so defile my conscience, and sometimes so weaken my hands in the way of God, and my comforts in the Lord; O how glad should I be, if I might be stripped of them, *Rom. 7. 24*. Which fear puts the soul upon flying to the Lord by prayer, for the covering
of

of his imputed *righteousness*, and for *strength* against the *Devils temptations* and its own *corruptions*; that God would give down his *holy spirit* to strengthen it against the things that do so annoy its soul, and so discourage it in its way, with a resolution through grace, never to be contented, while it doth find in it self a triumphing over it by faith in the blood of a Crucified Jesus.

Secondly, The soul that hath been thus *killed by the Law* to its things it formerly delighted in; now, O now it cannot be contented with that slender groundless faith and hope that once it contented it self withal. No, no, but now it must be brought into the right saving knowledge of Jesus Christ, now it must have him discovered to the soul by the spirit, now it cannot be satisfied, because such and such do tell it is so. No, but now it will cry out, *Lord shew me continually in the light of thy Spirit through thy word, that Jesus that was born in the days of Cesar Augustus (when Mary a Daughter of Judah went with Joseph to be taxed at Bethelhem) that he is the very Christ.* Lord let me see it in the light of thy spirit, and in the operation thereof, and let me not be contented without such a faith that is so wrought: even by the discovery of his birth, crucifying, death, blood, resurrection, ascension, intercession, and second (which is his personal) coming again, that

212 *Who, and how men are actually*

the very faith of it may fill my soul with comfort and holiness: and O how afraid the soul is, lest it should fall short of this faith, and of the hope that is begotten by such discoveries as these are? For the soul knoweth, that if it hath not this, it will not be able to stand neither in death nor judgment: and therefore saith the soul, Lord, whatever other poor souls content themselves withal, let me have that which will stand me instead, and carry me through a dangerous world, that may help me to resist a cunning Devil, that may help me to suck true soul satisfying consolation from Jesus Christ through thy promises by the might and power of thy Spirit. And now when the poor soul at any time hath any discovery of the love of God through a bleeding, dying, risen, interceding Jesus, because it is not willing to be deceived; O how

** But this may be its temptation taking place through the timorousness of the soul.*

** wary is it of closing with it, for fear it should not be right, for fear it should not come from God? Saith the soul, Cannot the Devil give one such comfort too? Cannot he transform himself thus into an Angel of light? So that the soul (because it would be upon a sure ground) cries out, Lord shew me thy salvation, and that not once or twice: but Lord let me have thy presence continually upon my heart, to day and to morrow, and every day;*
for

brought into the New Covenant. 213

for the soul when it is rightly brought from under the Covenant of Works, and planted into the Covenant of Grace, then it cannot be (unless it be under some desperate temptation) contented without the presence of God, teaching, comforting, stablishing, and helping of the soul to grow in the things of the Lord Jesus Christ: because it knoweth, that if God hath but with-drawn his presence in any way from it (as he doth do sometimes for a while) that then the Devil will be sure to be near at hand, working with his temptations, trying all ways to get the soul into slavery and sin again; also the corrupt principle that will be joyning and combining with the wicked one, and will be willing to be a Co-partner with him, to bring the soul into mischief, which puts a soul upon an earnest, continual panting after more of the strengthening, preserving, comforting, and teaching presence of God, and for strong supplies of faith, that it may effectually lay hold on him.

Thirdly, The soul is quickned so, that it is not satisfied now without it do indeed and in truth partake of the peace of Gods Elect; now it is upon the examination of the reality of its joy and peace: Time was indeed that any thing would serve its turn, any false conceits of its state to be good: but now all kind of peace will not serve its turn, all kind of

214 *Who, and how men are actually*

joy will not be accepted with it; now it must joy in God through *Jesus Christ*, now its peace must come through the vertue of the *blood of Christ*, speaking peace to the conscience, by taking away both the guilt and the filth of sin by that blood, also by shewing the soul its free acceptance with God through *Christ*, he having compleatly fulfilled all the conditions of the first Covenant, and freely placed it into the safety of what he hath done, and so presents the soul compleat and spotless in the sight of God through his obedience. Now I say, he hath peace through the blood of his Cross, and sees himself reconciled to God by the death of his Son, Col. 1. 20, 21. or else his comfort will be questioned by him. It is not every promise as cometh now upon his heart that will serve his turn: no, but he must see whether the *Babe Jesus* be presented to the soul, in and through that promise; now if the *Babe* leap in his womb, as I may say, so say, it is because the Lords promise sounds aloud in his heart, coming to him big with the love and pardoning grace of God in *Jesus Christ*; I say, this is the first and principle joy that the soul hath, that is quickened and brought into the Covenant of Grace.

Fourthly, Now the man finds Heavenly sanctification wrought in his soul, through the most precious blood of the man whose name is
Jesus,

brought into the New Covenant. 215

Jesus Christ. *Jesus that he might sanctifie the people with his own blood, suffered without the gate* Now the soul finds a change in the *understanding*, in the *will*, in the *mind*, in the *affections*, in the *judgment*, and also in the *conscience*; through the *inward man* a change, and through the *outward man* a change, from head to foot, as we use to say. For he that is in *Christ*, and so in this *Covenant of Grace*, is a *new Creature*, 2 Cor. 5. 17. or hath been twice made, made, and made again. Onow the soul is resolved for Heaven and Glory, now it crieth out, Lord if there be a right eye that is offensive to thee, pluck it out; or a right foot, cut it off; or a right hand, take it from me; now the *soul* doth begin to study how it may *honour God*, and bring *praise* to him. Now the *soul* is for a *preparation*, for the *second coming* of *Christ*, endeavouring to lay aside every thing that may hinder: And for the closing in with those things that may make it in a *belov-ed posture* against that day.

Fifthly, And all this is from a *Gospel Spirit*, and not from a *Legal natural principle*, for the soul hath these things as the *fruits and effects* of its being separated unto the *Covenant of Grace*, and so now *possessed* with that spirit that doth attend, yea, and dwell in them that are brought into the *Covenant of Grace*, from under the *Old Covenant*; I say, these

216 *Who, and how men are actually*
things do spring forth in the *soul*, from another
root and stock, then any of the *actings* as other
men do; for the *soul* that is thus wrought up-
on, is as well dead to the *Law* and the *righte-*
ousness thereof (as the *first Covenant*) as well
as to its *sins*.

Sixthly, Now the *soul* begins to have
some *blessed experience* of the things of
God, even of the *glorious mysteries* of the
Gospel.

1. Now it knoweth the meaning of those
words. *My flesh is meat indeed, and my blood*
is drink indeed, John 6. 55. and that by ex-
perience; for the *soul* hath received *peace* of
conscience through that *blood*, by the effectual
application of it to the *soul*. First, by feeling
the guilt of *sin* dye off from the con-
science, by the operation thereof. Secondly,
by feeling the power thereof, to take
away the curse of the *Law*. Thirdly, By
finding the very strength of *Hell* to fail, when
once the *blood* of the *man Jesus Christ* is re-
ceived in reality upon the *soul*.

2. Now the *soul* also knoweth by experience,
the meaning of that Scripture that saith, *Our*
old man is crucified with him, that the body of
sin might be destroyed, Rom. 6. 6. Now it sees
that when the *man Jesus* did hang on the tree
on Mount *Calvary*, that then the *body* of its
sins was there hanged up, dead and buried with
him,

brought into the New Covenant. 217

him, though it was then unborn, so as never to be laid to its charge, either here or hereafter; and also, so as never to carry it captive into perpetual bondage, being it self overcome by him, even *Christ* the head of that *poor creature*. And indeed this is the way for a *soul*, both to live comfortably, as touching the guilt of sin; and also, as touching the power of the *filth* of sin: for the soul that doth, or hath received this indeed and in truth, finds strength against them both, by and through that *man* that did for him and the rest of his *fellow sinners*, so gloriously overcome it, and hath given the victory unto them, so that now they are said to be overcomers, nay, *more than conquerors through him*, the one man Jesus Christ, *Rom. 8. 33, 34, 35, 36, 37.*

3. Now the soul hath received a *faith* indeed, and a lively *hope* indeed, such a one as now it can fetch strength from the fulness of *Christ*, and from the merits of *Christ*.

4. Yea, now the *soul* can look on it self with one eye, and look upon *Christ* with another; and say indeed it is true, I am an empty soul, but *Christ* is a full *Christ*; I am a poor sinner, but *Christ* is a rich *Christ*; I am a foolish sinner, but *Christ* is a wise *Christ*; I am an unholy, ungodly, unsanctified creature in my self, But *Christ* is made of *God*, unto me, wisdom, righteousness, sanctification and redemption, 1 *Cor. i. 30.*

5. Now

5. Now also that *fiery Law*, that it could not once endure, nor could not once delight in; I say, now it can delight in it after the *inward man*, now this *Law* is its *delight*, it would always be *walked* in it, and always be *delighted* in it, being offended with any sin, or any corruption, that would be any ways an hinderance to it, *Rom. 7. 24. 25.* And yet it will not edure that, even that that *Law* should offer to take the *work* of its *salvation* out of *Christs hand*: no, if it once comes to do that, then out of doors it shall go, if it was as good again. For that *soul* that hath the *right work* of God indeed upon it, cries, not my *prayers*, not my *tears*, not my *works*, not my *things*, do they come from the *work* of the *spirit* of *Christ* it self within me; yet these shall not have the *glory* of my *salvation*: no, it is none but the *blood* of *Christ*, the *death* of *Christ*, of the man *Christ Jesus* of *Nazareth* the *Carpenters Son* (as they called him) that must have the *Crown* and *Glory* of my *salvation*. None but *Christ*, none but *Christ*; and thus the *soul labours* to give *Christ* the preeminence, *Col. 1. 18.*

Now before I go any further, I must needs speak a word from my own experience of the things of *Christ*; and the rather because we have a *company* of silly ones in this *day* of *ignorance*, that do either comfort themselves with

a *notion* without the power, or else do both reject the *notion* and the *power* of this most glorious Gospel: therefore, for the further *conviction* of the Reader, I shall tell him (with David) something of what the Lord hath done for my *soul*, and indeed a little of the *experience* of the *things* of Christ, is far more *worth* than all the *world*. It would be too *tedious* for me to tell thee (here) all from the first to the last, but something I shall tell thee, that thou mayest not think these things are fables.

Reader, when it pleased the Lord to begin to instruct my soul, he found me one of the *black sinners* of the *world*; he found me making a sport of Oaths, and also of Lies, and many a *soul-poysoning meal* did I make out of divers Lusts, as Drinking, Dancing, Playing, Pleasure with the *wicked ones* of the *world*. The Lord finding of me in this* condition, did open the *glass* of his *Law* unto me, wherein he shewed me so clearly my *sins*, both the greatness of them, and also how abominable they were in his sight, that I thought the very *clouds* were

* This conviction seized on my soul, one Sabbath day when I was at play, being one of the first that I had; which when it came, though it scared me with its terror, yet through the temptation of the devil, immediately striking in therewith, I did rub it off again and became as vile for some time as I was before, like a wretch that I was.

charged

charged with the *wrath* of God, and ready to let fall the very *fire* of his *jealousie* upon me : yet for all this I was so wedded to my sins, that I thought I with my self, I will have them, though I lose my soul (O wicked wretch that I was) but God the great, the rich, the *infinite merciful God*, did not take this *advantage* of my soul, to cast me away, and say, then take him *Devil*, seeing he cares for me no more: no, but he followed me still, and won upon my heart, by giving of me some *understanding*, not only into my *miserable state* which I was very *sensible* of; but also that there might be *hopes* of *mercy*, also taking away that love to lust, and placing in the room thereof a love to religion; and thus the *Lord* won over my heart to some *desire* after the *means*, to hear the *word*, and to grow a *stranger* to my old *companions*, and to *accompany* the *people* of God, together with giving of me many *sweet encouragements* from several *promises* in the *Scriptures*: but after this, the *Lord* did wonderfully set my *sins* upon my *conscience*, those *sins* especially that I had committed since the first convictions, *temptations* also followed me very hard, and especially such *temptations* as did tend to the making of me question the very way of salvation, *viz.* whether *Jesus Christ* was the *Saviour* or no: and whether I had best to venture my soul upon

upon his *blood* for *salvation*, or take some other course. But being through *grace* kept close with God (in some measure) in *prayer*, and the rest of the *ordinances*; but went about a year and upwards, without any sound evidence as from God to my *soul*, touching the *salvation* as comes by *Jesus Christ*. But at the last, as I may say, when the set time was come, then the Lord (just before the *men* called, *Quakers* came into the *Countrey*) did set me down so blessedly in the *truth* of the *Doctrine* of *Jesus Christ*, that it made me marvel, to see how *Jesus Christ* was *born* of a *Virgin*, *walked* in the *world* a while with his *Disciples*, afterwards *hanged* on the *Cross*, *spilt* his *Blood*, was *Buried*, *Rose* again, *Ascended* above the *Clouds* and *Heavens*, their *lives* to make *intercession*, and that he also will come again at the *last day* to judge the *World*, and take his *Saints* unto himself. These things, I say, I did see so evidently, even as if I had stood by when he was in the *world*, and also when he was *caught up*. I having such a *change* as this upon my *soul*, it made me *wonder*; and musing with my self at the great *alteration* that was in my *spirit*, for the Lord did also very *gloriously* give me in his *precious word* to back the *discovery* of the *Son of God* unto me, so that I can say, through *grace* it was according to the *Scriptures*, 1 Cor. 15. 1, 2, 3, 4.) and as I was *musings* with my self

self what these things should mean, methought I heard such a *word* in my *heart* as this; *I have set thee down on purpose*, for I have *something more than ordinary* for thee to do; which made me the more marvel; saying, What, my Lord, such a poor *wretch* as I? yet still this continued, *I have set thee down on purpose*, and so forth, with more fresh incomes of the Lord *Jesus*, and the power of the blood of his *Cross* upon my *soul*, even so evidently, that I saw (through *grace*) that it was the blood shed on Mount *Calvary* that did save and redeem sinners, as clearly and as really with the eyes of my *soul*, as ever (methoughts) I had seen a penny-loaf bought with a penny; which things then discovered, had such operation upon my *soul*, that I do hope, they did sweetly season every faculty thereof. Reader, I speak in the presence of God, and he knows I lye not: much of this, and such like *dealings* of his, could I tell thee of; but my *business* at this time is not so to do, but only to tell what operation the blood of *Christ* hath had over and upon my *conscience*, and that at several times, and also when I have been in several frames of spirit.

As first, sometimes I have been so *laden* with my *sins*, that I could not tell where to rest, nor what to do; yea, at such times I thought it would have taken away my *senses*: yet at that time,

time, God through grace hath all of a sudden, so effectually applied the blood that was *spilt* at Mount Calvary, out of the side of *Jesus*, unto my poor wounded *guilty* conscience, that presently I have found such a sweet, solid, sober, heart comforting peace, that it hath made me, as if it had not been, and withal the same (I may say, and I ought to say, the power of it) hath had such a *powerful* operation upon my soul, that I have for a time been in a *straight* and trouble, to think that I should *love* and *honour* him no more, the *virtue* of his blood hath so constrained me.

Again, sometimes methinks my *sins* have appeared so big to me, that I thought one of my *sins* have been as *big* as all the sins of all the men in the *Nation*, I, and of other *Nations* too. (Reader, these things be not fancies; for I have *smarted* for this experience) but yet the least *stream* of the heart blood of this man *Jesus*, hath vanished all away, and hath made it to lie, to the *astonishment* of such a poor sinner; and as I said before, hath delivered me up into *sweet* and *heavenly* peace, and joy in the *holy Ghost*.

Again, sometimes when my heart hath been hard, dead, slothful, blind and senseless (which indeed are sad frames for a *poor Christian* to be in) yet at such a time when I have been in such a case, then hath the blood of *Christ* the precious

precious blood of Christ, the admirable blood of the God of Heaven, that run out of his body when it did hang on the Cross, so softened, livened, quickned, and inlightned my soul; that truly (Reader) I can say, O it makes me wonder!

Again, when I have been laden with sin, and pestered with several temptations, and in very sad manner, then have I had the trial of the vertue of Christs blood: with the trial of the vertue of other things: and I have found that when tears would not do, prayers would not do, repentings and all other things could not reach my heart: O then one touch, one drop, one shining of the vertue of the blood, of that blood that was let out with a spear; it hath in a very blessed manner delivered me, that it hath made me to marvel. O! methinks it hath come with such life, such power, with such irresistible and marvellous glory, that it wipes off all the slurs, blonches, all the out-cries, and quenches all the fiery darts, and all the flames of hell fire, that are begotten by the charges of the Law, Satan, and doubtful remembrances of my sinful life.

Friends, as Peter saith to the Church, so I say to you, I have not preached to you cunningly devised fables, in telling you of the blood of Christ, and what authority it hath had upon my Conscience: O no, but as Peter saith touching the coming of the Lord Jesus into the world;

so in some measure I can say of the *blood* of the *Lord Jesus Christ*, that was shed when he did come into the *world*. There is not only my single *testimony* touching this; no, but there is all the *Prophets* do agree, in advancing this in writing, and also all the *Saints* do now declare the same, in speaking forth the aimableness, and many powerful vertues thereof. *As for thee, by the blood of thy Covenant* (saith God to Christ) *I have sent forth thy prisoners out of the pit, wherein was no water*, Zech. 9. 11. *We have redemption through his blood*, Ephes. 1. 7. Again, Col. 1. 14. *We have redemption through his blood*. Our robes are washed, and made white in the blood of the Lamb, Rev. 7. 14. The Devil is overcome through the blood of the Lamb, Rev. 12. 11. Yea, and conscience is purged too, and that through the blood of the Lamb, Heb. 9. 14. *We have free recourse to the Throne of grace through the blood of Jesus*, Heb. 10. 19. I could bring thee a cloud of witnesses out of all the types and shadows, and out of the sundry Prophets, and much more out of the *New Testament*, but I forbear, because I would not be too tedious to thee Reader, in making too large a digression, though I have committed here in this *Discourse*, no transgression, for the blood of Christ is precious blood, 1 Pet. 1. 18, 19.

In the next place I shall shew you the several *priviledges* and *advantages* the man or wo-

Q

man

man hath, that is under this Covenant of Grace, over they have that are under the Covenant of the Law and Works.

As first, the Covenant of Grace is not grounded upon our obedience, but upon Gods love, even his *pardonning love* to us through *Christ Jesus*. The first Covenant it stood to be broken or kept by us, and Gods love or anger, to be lost, or enjoyed hereafter, as we, as creatures behaved our selves: but now the very ground of the Covenant of Grace is Gods love, 'tis meer love through *Jesus Christ*, Deut. 7. 8, 9. *The Lord did not set his love upon you, nor chuse you; because you were more in number then other people; for you were the fewest of all people: but because the Lord loves you, and because he will keep the oath which he swore to your fathers.* Again, Isa. 63. 9. *In his love and in his pity he redeemed them, and the Angel of his presence saved them, that is Jesus Christ.* And again, 2 Tim. 1. 9. *Who hath saved us.* — Not according to the works of righteousness which we have done; but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given to us in *Christ Jesus*, before the world began.

* Secondly, This love is not conveyed to us through what we have done (as is afore proved) but through what he hath done, with whom the Covenant was made, *which was given us in Christ.* According as he hath chasen us in *Christ*,
Who

Who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ. God for Christs sake hath loved you (2 Tim 1. 9. Eph 1. 3, 4. Eph. 4. 32.) That is through Christs doings, through Christs sufferings. Now if this be but rightly understood, it doth discover abundance of comfort to them that are within the bounds of the Covenant of Grace. For

First, Here a believer seeth he shall stand, if Christs doings and sufferings stand (which is a sure Foundation) for God dealeth with him through Christ. And so Secondly, He shall not fall, unless the sufferings and merits of Christ be thrown over the bar, being found guilty (which will never be) before the eyes of divine justice. For with him the Covenant was made, and he was the surety of it, *Zech. 9. 11. Heb. 7. 22.* That is, as the Covenant was made with him, so he stood bound to fulfill the same. For you must understand that the Covenant was made between the Father and the Son, long before it was accomplished, or manifestly sealed with Christs blood, it was made before the world began, (*Tit. 1. 2. Ephes. 1. 4. 1 Pet. 1. 18, 19, 20.*) But the conditions thereof was not fulfilled, until less than Two Thousand Years ago; and all that while did Jesus stand bound as a surety (as I said before) is used to do, till the time in which the payment should be made. And it was by vertue of his

suretiship (having bound himself by Covenant to do all things agreed on, by the Father and him) that all those of the election that were born before he came, that they might be saved, and did enter into rest. For the forgiveness of sins that was past, though it was through the blood of Christ; yet it was also through the forbearance of God, *Rom. 3. 25.* That is, Christ becoming surety for those that died before his coming, that he would indeed and in truth, at the fulness of time (or at the time appointed, *Gal. 4. 4.*) give a compleat and full satisfaction for them according to the tenour, or condition of the Covenant.

Again Secondly, The second Covenant, which Believers are under, as the ground and foundation if it is safe; so the promises thereof are better, surer, freer and fuller, &c.

First, They are better, if you compare the excellency of the one with the excellency of the other. The first hath promised nothing but an earthly paradise, *Do this and thou shalt live.* Namely, here in an earthly paradise. But the other doth bring the promise of an heavenly paradise.

Secondly, As the Covenant of Works doth promise an earthly Paradise; yet it is a Paradise or Blessing, though once obtained, yet might be lost again (for no longer than thou doest well, no longer art thou accepted by that)

O but the Promises in the New Covenant, do bring unto us the benefit of eternal inheritance, (*Heb. 9. 15.*) *That they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.* O rare ! it is an eternal inheritance.

Thirdly, The other, as it is not so good as this, so neither is it so sure as this, and therefore he calls the one, such a one as might be, and was shaken (*Heb. 12. 27.*) but this is said to be such a one that cannot be shaken. *And this word*, saith he, treating of the two Covenants from verse the 18. to the 24. *And this word*, yet once more, signifies the removing of those things that are (or may be) shaken, as of things that are made, that those things that cannot be shaken (which is the second Covenant) may remain; for saith he, verse the 28. *which cannot be moved.* Therefore ye blessed Saints, seeing you have received a Kingdom which cannot, *which cannot be moved:* (therefore) *Let us have grace whereby we may serve (our) God acceptably, with reverence and godly fear.* Thus in general, but more particular.

First, They are surer, in that they are founded upon Gods love also, and they come to us without calling for those things at our hands, that may be a means of putting of a stop to our certain enjoying of them. The promises under or of the Law, they might easily be stopped by our disobedience: but the

promises under the Gospel saith, *If heaven above can be measured, and the foundation of the earth searched out, then (and not till then) will I cast off all the seed of Israel for all that they have done.* Again, I, even I am he that blotteth out thy transgressions for my own Names sake, and will not remember thy sins, Isa. 43. 25. I will make thee a Partaker of my Promise; and that I may so do, I will take away that which would hinder; I will cast all your sins into the depths of the sea, that my promise may be sure to all the seed. And therefore saith the Apostle, when he would shew us that the New Covenant promises was more sure then the Old; he tells us plainly that the Law and Works are set aside, and they are meerly made ours through the righteousness of faith, which is the righteousness of Christ. *For the promise that Abraham should be heir of the world (saith he) was not to him, or to his seed through the Law, (or Works) but through the righteousness of faith. For if they which are of the Law (or of Works) be heirs, then faith is made void, and the promise made of none effect. Therefore it is of faith — to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed, Rom. 4. 13, 14, 16.*

Secondly surer, because that as that is taken away that should hinder, so they are committed to a faithful friend of ours in keeping: *For all the promises of God are in Christ; not yea and*

yea and nay, but yea and amen ; certain and sure ; sure because they are in the hand of our head , our friend , our brother , our husband , our flesh and bones , even in the heart and hand of our precious Jesus.

Thirdly , Because all the conditions of them are already fulfilled for us by Jesus Christ , as aforesaid , every promise that is a New Covenant promise , if there be any condition in it , our undertaker hath accomplished that for us , and also giveth us such grace as to receive the sweetness as doth spring from them through his obedience to every thing required in them.

Fourthly , surer , because that as they are grounded upon the love of God ; every thing taken out of the way , in the hand of a sure friend : And as Christ hath fulfilled every condition as to justification that is contained therein ; so the Lord hath solemnly sworn with an oath for our better confidence in this particular , *For when God made promise to Abraham (and so to all Saints) because he could swear by no greater , he swore by himself , saying , Surely , blessing I will bless thee , and multiplying I will multiply thee : and so after he had patiently endured , he obtained the promise. For men verily swear by the greater , and an oath for confirmation is to them an end of all strife (that there might be no more doubt or scruple concerning the certain fulfilling of the promise) wherein*

God willing more abundantly to shew unto the heirs of promise the immutability of his counsel, or certain, constant, unchangeable decree of God in making of the promise, for the comfort of his children) confirmed it by an Oath, that by two immutable things, his promise (back'd with an Oath) wherein it is impossible for God to lie, we might have strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us, Heb. 6. 13, 14. 15, 16, 17, 18.

Fifthly, That they are better it appears also, in that they are freer and fuller; that they are freer, it is evident, in that the one saith, no works no life: Do this, and then thou shalt live, if not, thou shalt be damned. But the other saith, we are saved by believing in what another hath done, without the works of the Law; Now to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness, Rom. 4, 4, 5. The one saith pay me that thou owest; the other saith, I do frankly and freely forgive thee all. The one saith, because thou hast sinned thou shalt die; the other saith, because Christ lives thou shalt live also, John 15.

Secondly, And as they are freer, so they are fuller; fuller of encouragement, fuller of comfort; the one (to wit the Law) looks like Pharaohs seven ill favoured kine, more ready to eat one up, then to afford us any food, The other

other is like the full grape in the cluster, which for certain hath a glorious blessing in it. The one saith, if thou hast sinned, turn again; the other saith, if thou hast sinned, thou shalt be damned, for all I have a promise in me.

Thirdly, They that are of the second, are better then they that are of the first; and it also appeareth in this. The promises of the Law, through them we have neither faith, nor hope, nor the Spirit conveyed: But through the promises of the Gospel there is all these, 1 Pet. 1. 4. *Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises, that by these we might be partakers of the Divine nature.* O therefore let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering; for he is faithful that promised, Heb. 10. 23. *In hope of eternal life (who so) because God that cannot lie, promised it before the world began,* Tit. 1. 2.

Fourthly, They that are in this Covenant are in a very happy state; for though there be several conditions in the Gospel to be done, yet Christ Jesus doth not look that they should be done by man, as man, but by his own Spirit in them, as it is written, *Thou hast wrought all our works in us and for us.* Is there that condition, they must believe; why then, he will be both the *Author and finisher of their faith*, Heb. 12. 2, 3. Is there also hope to be in his Children, he also doth, and hath given them
good

good hope through his grace, 2 Thef. 2. 26. Again, are the people of God to behave themselves to the glory of God the Father? Then he will work in them *both to will and to do of his own good pleasure*, Phil. 2. 13.

Fifthly, Again, as he works all our works in us and for us, so also by vertue of this Covenant, we have another nature given unto us. Whereby, or by which we are made willing to be glorifying of God both in our bodies, and in our spirits, which are his, *Thy people shall be willing in the day of thy power*, 2 Cor. 6. 20. Psal. 110. 3.

Sixthly, In the next place, all those that are under this second Covenant, are in a wonderful safe condition: For in case they should slip or fall, after their conversion into some sin or sins, (for who lives and sins not, *Prov. 24. 16.*) yet through the merits and intercession of Christ Jesus, who is their undertaker in this Covenant, they shall have their sins pardoned, their wounds healed, and they raised up again; which priviledge the children of the first Covenant have not, for if they sin, they are never afterwards regarded by that Covenant. *They break my Covenant, and I regarded them not*, Heb. 8. 9. But when he comes to speak of the Covenant of Grace, speaking first of the publick person under the name of *David*, he saith

said thus, Psal. 89. from the 26. verse to the 37. He shall cry unto me, Thou art my Father, my God, and the rock of my Salvation. Also I will make him my first-born: higher then the kings of the earth. My mercy will I keep for him for evermore, and my Covenant shall stand fast with him. His seed also will I make to endure for ever, and his throne as the days of heaven. If his Children forsake my Law, and walk not in my judgment: If they break my Statutes, and keep not my Commandments; then will I visit their transgression with the rod, and their iniquity with stripes. Nevertheless my loving kindness will I not break, nor alter the thing that is gone out of my lips. Once have I sworn by my holiness, that I will not lie unto David; His seed shall endure for ever, and his throne as the Sun before me; it shall be established for ever as the Moon, and as a faithful witness in heaven. My Covenant shall stand fast with him, mark that, As if God had said, I did not make this Covenant with man, but with my Son, and with him I will perform it; and seeing he hath given me compleat satisfaction, though his Children do through infirmity transgress, yet my Covenant is not therefore broken, seeing he with whom it was made, standeth firm, according to the desire of my heart;

so

so that my justice that is satisfied, and my Law hath nothing to say; for there is no want of perfection in the sacrifice of Christ.

If you love your souls and would have them live in the peace of God, to the which you are called in one body, even all Believers; then I beseech you seriously to ponder, and labour to settle in your souls this one thing, that the New Covenant is not broken by our transgressions, and that because it was not made with us. The reason why the very Saints of God have so many ups and downs in this their travel towards heaven; it is because they are so weak in the faith of this one thing; for they think that if they fail of this or that particular performance, if their hearts be dead and cold, and their lusts mighty and strong; therefore now God is angry, and now he will shut them out of his favour, now the New Covenant is broken, and now Christ Jesus will stand their friend no longer; now also the devil hath power again, and now they must have their part in the resurrection of damnation; when alas the Covenant is not for all this never the more broken, and so the Grace of God no more straightned then it was before. Therefore I say, when thou findest that thou art weak here, and failing there, backward to this good,

good, and thy heart forward to that evil; then be sure thou keep a steadfast eye on the Mediator of this New Covenant; and be perswaded, that it is not only made with him, and his part also fulfilled, but that he doth look upon his fulfilling of it, so as not to lay thy sins to thy charge, though he may as a father chastise thee for the same. *If his children forsake my Law, and walk not in my judgments. If they break my statutes, and keep not my Commandments; then will I visit their transgressions with a rod, and their iniquities with stripes. Nevertheless, mark, nevertheless my loving kindness will I not utterly take from him: nor suffer my faithfulness to fail. My Covenant will I not break, nor alter the thing that is gone out of my mouth.* And what was that? why, that his seed shall endure for ever, and his throne as the days of Heaven, Psal. 89. 30, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36.

Seventhly, Another priviledge that the Saints have by vertue of the New Covenant, is, that they have part of the possession, or hold of heaven and glory already: and that two manner of ways. First, the divine nature is conveyed from heaven into them. And Secondly, the humane nature (*i. e.*) the nature of man is received up, and entertained in, and hath got possession of Heaven.

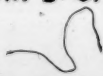
1. We have the first-fruits of the spirit (saith
the

the man of God) we have the earnest of the spirit which is instead of the whole. *Which is the earnest of our inheritance, until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory*, Rom. 8. 8, 9, 10, 11. Eph. 1. 13, 14.

2. The nature of man, OUR nature is got into glory as the *first fruits of man-kind*, as a fore-runner to take possession till we *all come thither*, 1 Cor. 15. 20. For the man born at *Bethlem* is ascended (which is part of the lump of mankind) into glory, as a publick person, as the *first-fruits*, representing the whole of the Children of God. So that in some sense it may be said, that the Saints have already taken possession of the Kingdom of Heaven, by their Jesus, their publick person; he being in their room entred to prepare a place for them, John 14. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5.

I beseech you consider, When Jesus Christ came down from glory, it was that he might bring us to glory; and that he might be sure not to fail, he clothed himself with our nature, as if one should take a piece out of the whole lump instead of the whole, *Heb. 2. 14, 15.* (until the other comes) and investeth in that glory which he was in before he came down from Heaven: and thus is that saying to be understood, speaking of Christ and Saints, which saith, *And (he) hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in Heavenly places in Christ Jesus*, Eph. 2. 6.

Fifthly,



Eighthly, Again, not only thus, but all the power of God, 1 *Pet.* 1. 5. together with the rest of his glorious attributes, are on our side, in that they dwell in our nature, which is the man Jesus, and doth ingage for us, poor, simple, empty, nothing creatures, as to our eternal happiness. *For in him* (that is in the man Christ who is our nature, our head, our root, our flesh, our bone) *dwelleth all the fulness of the God-head bodily*; *Col.* 2. 9, 10. Mark how they are joyned together, *In whom dwelleth the fulness of the God-head. And ye are compleat in him.* God dwelleth compleatly in him, and you also are compleatly implanted in him, which is the head of all principality and power, and all this by the consent of the Father. *For it hath pleased the Father, that in him should all fulness dwell.* Now mark, the God-head doth not dwell in Christ Jesus for himself only, but that it may be in a way of righteousness conveyed to us, for our comfort and help in all our wants. *All power is given unto me in Heaven and Earth,* saith he, *Mat.* 28. 18. And then followeth, *And lo I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world,* *Psal.* 68. 18. 20. *He hath received gifts for men, even for the rebellious,* *John* 1. 16. *Of his fulness have we all received, and grace for grace,* *Col.* 1. 9. And this the Saints cannot be deprived of, because the Covenant made with Christ, in every title of it was so compleatly

240 *Two Hell-bred Objections answered.*

pleatly fulfilled as to righteousness, both active and passive, that justice cannot object any thing, holiness now can find fault with nothing; nay, all the power of God cannot shake any thing that hath been done for us by the *Mediator of the New Covenant*; so that now there is no Covenant of Works to a Believer, none of the commands, accusations, condemnations, or the least rittle of the Old Covenant to be charged on any of those that are the Children of the Second Covenant, no sin to be charged, because there is no Law to be pleaded, but all is made up by our middle man Christ Jesus. O blessed Covenant! O blessed Priviledge! Be wise therefore O ye poor drooping souls that are the sons of this second Covenant. And *stand fast in the liberty wherewith CHRIST hath made you free, and be not again intangled* (not terrified in your consciences) *with the yoke of bondage*; neither the commands, accusations, or condemnations of the Law of the Old Covenant, *Gal. 5. 1, 2.*

Object. If it be so, then one need not care what they do, they may sin and sin again, seeing Christ hath made satisfaction.

Answ. If I was to point out one that was under the power of the Devil, and going poste haste to hell (for my life) I would look no further for such aman, then to him that would make such a use as this of the grace of God. What because Christ is a Saviour, thou wilt be a sinner; because

because his grace abounds, therefore thou wilt abound in in. O wicked wretch ! rake hell all over, and surely I think thy fellow will scarce be found : And let me tell thee this before I leave thee, as Gods Covenant with Christ for his Children (which are of faith) stands sure, immutable, unrevokable, and unchangeable ; so also hath God taken such a course with thee, that unless thou can'st make God forswear himself, it is impossible that thou shouldest go to heaven, dying in that condition. *They tempted me, proved me,* and turned the grace of God into lasciviousness (Compare *Heb. 3. 9. 10, 11. ver.* with the *1 Cor. 10. Chap.* from the 5. verse to the 10.) *So I swear,* mark that, *So I swear* (and that in my wrath too) *that they should never enter into my rest.* No, saith God, if Christ will not serve their turns, but they must have their sins too, take them devil; if Heaven will not satisfy them, take them hell, devour them hell, scald them, fry them, burn them hell; God hath more places than one to put sinners into, if they do not like of Heaven, he will fit them with Hell; if they do not like Christ, they shall be forced to have the Devil. Therefore we must and will tell of the truth of the nature of the Covenant of the grace of God to his poor Saints, for their encouragement, and for their comfort, who would be glad to leap at Christ upon any terms: yet therewith we can tell how through grace, to tell the

242 *Two Hell-bred Objections Answered.*

hogs and sons of this world, what a hogsty there is prepared for them, even such a one that God hath prepared to put the Devil and his Angels into, is fitly prepared for them, *Mat. 25. 41.*

Object. But if Christ hath given God a full and compleat satisfaction, then though I do go on in sin, I need not fear, seeing God hath already been satisfied; it will be injustice in God to punish for those sins, for which he is already satisfied for by Christ.

Ans. *Rebell, rebell,* there are some in Christ, and some out of him; they that are in him have their sins forgiven, and they themselves made new creatures, and have the spirit of the Son, which is a holy, loving, self-denying spirit. And they that are thus in Jesus Christ are so far off from delighting in sin, that sin is the greatest thing that troubleth them; and O how willingly would they be rid of the very thoughts of it, *Psal. 119. 113.* It is the grief of their souls (when they are in a right frame of spirit) that they can live no more to the honour and glory of God, then they do; and in all their prayers to God, the breathings of their souls is as much for sanctifying grace as pardoning grace, that they might live a holy life; they would as willingly live holy here, as they would be happy in the world to come, *Phil. 3. 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21.* they would as willingly be cleansed from the filth of sin, as to have

have the guilt of it taken away ; they would as willingly glorifie God here , as they would be glorified by him hereafter.

2. But there are some that are out of Christ , being under the Law, and as for all those , let them be civil or profane , they are such as God accounts wicked ; and I say, as for those, if all the Angels in Heaven can drag them before the Judgment-seat of Christ, they shall be brought before it to answer for all their ungodly deeds, *Jude 15.* and being condemned for them, if all the fire in Hell will burn them , they shall be burned there (if they die in that condition.) And therefore if you love your souls, do not give way to such a wicked spirit. *Let no man deceive you with (such) vain words* (as to think, because Christ hath made satisfaction to God for sin: therefore you may live in your sins. O no, God forbid that any should think so) *for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience,* Ephes. 5 6.

Thus have I (*Reader*) given thee a brief discourse, touching the Covenant of Works , and the Covenant of Grace, also of the nature of the one, together with the nature of the other. I have also in this Discourse, endeavoured to shew you the condition of them that are under the Law, how sad it is, both from the nature of the Covenant they are under, and also by the carriage of God unto them by that Covenant. And

now because I would bring all into as little a compass as I can, I shall begin with the Use and Application of the whole in as brief a way as I can, desiring the Lord to bless it to thee.

And first of all, let us here begin to examine a little touching the Covenant you stand before God in, whether it be the Covenant of Works, or the Covenant of Grace; and for the right doing of this, I shall lay down this proposition. Namely, that all men naturally come into the world under the first of these, which is called the Old Covenant, or the Covenant of Works, which is the Law. *And were all by nature the children of wrath, even as others;* which they could not be, had they not been under the Law; for there are none that are under the other Covenant, that are still the Children of the wrath but the Children of faith; the Children of the promise, the accepted Children; the Children not of the Bond-man, but of the free, *Gal. 4.* the 4. last verses.

Now here lieth the question. Which of these two Covenants art thou under, soul?

Ans. I hope I am under the Covenant of Grace.

Quest. But what ground hast thou to think that thou art under that blessed Covenant? and not rather under the Covenant of Works, that strict, that soul-damning Covenant?

Ans. What ground, Why, I hope I am.

Quest.

Quest. But what ground hast thou for this thy hope? For a hope without a ground is like a Castle built in the air, that will never be able to do thee any good, but will prove like unto that spoken of in the eighth of *Job*, *Whose hope shall be cut off, and whose trust shall be (like) a spiders web. He shall lean upon his House but it shall not stand, he shall hold it fast (as thou wouldst thy hope 'tis like, but it shall not endure,* *Job. 8. 13, 14, 15.*

Answ. My hope is grounded upon the promises, what else should it be grounded upon?

Answ. Indeed to build my hope upon Christ Jesus, upon God in Christ, through the promise, and to have this hope rightly, by the shedding abroad of the love of God in the heart, it is a right grounded hope, *Rom. 5. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5.*

Quest. But what promises in the Scripture do you find your hope built upon? And how do you know whether you do build your hope upon the promises in the Gospel, the promises of the New Covenant: and not rather on the promises of the Old Covenant, for there are promises in that as well as in the other?

Answ. I hope that if I do well I shall be accepted; because God hath said I shall, *Gen. 4. 7.*

Rep. O soul, if thy hope be grounded there, thy hope is not grounded upon the Gospel promises, or the New Covenant, but verily upon the old; for these words was spoken to *Cain*, a Son of the

Old Covenant ; and they themselves are the tenour and scope of that, for that runs thus. *Do this and thou shalt live. The man that doth these things shall live by them. If thou do well, thou shalt be accepted*, Levit. 18. 5. Ezek. 20. 11. Rom. 10. 5. Gal. 3. 12. Gen. 4. 7.

Rep. Why, truly if a mans doing well, and living well, and his striving to serve God as well as he can, will not help him to Christ, I do not know what will ; I am sure sinning against God will nor.

Quest. Did you never read that Scripture, which saith, *Israel which followed after the Law of righteousness, hath not attained to the Law of righteousness?* Rom. 9. 30, 31, 32.

Object. But doth not the Scripture say, *Blessed are they that keep his Commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life*, Rev. 22. 14.

Ans. There is first therefore to be enquired into, whether to keep his Commandments, be to strive to keep the Law, as it is a Covenant of Works ; or whether it be meant of the great Commandments of the New Testament, which are cited, 1 John 3. 22, 23. *And whatsoever we ask we receive of him, because we keep his Commandments, and do those things that are pleasing in his sight.* But what do you mean John? do you mean the Covenant of the Law, or the Covenant of the Gospel? Why, *This is his Commandment (saith he) that we should believe on the*

name

name of his Son Jesus Christ, and to love one another (as the fruits of this faith) as he gave us Commandment. If it be the *Old Covenant*, as a *Covenant of Works*, then the *Gospel* is but a lost thing. If it were of *Works*, then no more of *Grace*; therefore it is not the *Old Covenant*, as the *Old Covenant*.

Quest. But what do you mean by these words, the *Gld Covenant*, as the *Old Covenant*? explain your meaning.

Answ. My meaning is, that the Law is not to be looked upon for life, so as it was handed out from Mount *Sinai*, if ever thou wouldest indeed be saved, though after thou hast faith in Christ, thou mayest and must solace thy self in it, and take pleasure therein, to express thy love to him, who hath already saved thee by his own blood, without thy obedience to the Law, either from *Sinai*, or elsewhere.

Quest. Do you think that I do mean that my righteousness will save me, without Christs? if so, you mistake me, for I think not so: but this I say, I will labour to do what I can, and what I cannot do Christ will do for me.

Answ. Ah poor soul, this is the wrong way too, for this is to make Christ but a piece of a Saviour, thou wilt do something, and *Christ* shall do the rest, thou wilt set thy own things in the first place, and if thou wantest at last, then thou wilt borrow of Christ, thou art such a one

that doest *Christ* the greatest injury of all. First, in that thou doest undervalue his merits, by preferring of thy own works before his. And secondly, by mingling of his works, thy dirty ragged righteousness with his.

Quest. Why, would you have us do nothing? would you have us make *Christ* such a drudge as to do all, while we sit idling still?

Ans. Poor soul thou mistakest *Jesus Christ*, in saying thou makest him a drudge, in letting him do all: I tell thee he counts it a great glory to do all for thee, and it is a great dishonour unto him, for thee so much as to think otherwise. And this the Saints of God that have experienced the work of Grace upon their souls do count it also the same, *Rev.* 5. 9. *Saying, thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof,* ver. 12. *Worthy is the Lamb that was slain, to receive power and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing,* And why so? read again the 9. ver. *For thou wast slain and hast redeemed us to God by thy (own) blood.* See also *Ephes.* 1. 6, 7. *To the praise of the glory of his grace: In whom we have redemption through his blood.*

Rep. All this we confess that *Jesus Christ* died for us: but he that thinks to be saved by *Christ*, and liveth in his sins, shall never be saved.

Ans. I grant that. But this I say again, a man must not make his good doings the lowest round

round of the ladder, by which he goeth to Heaven; that is, he that will, and shall go to Heaven, must wholly and alone, without any of his own things, venture his precious soul upon *Jesus Christ* and his *merits*.

Quest. What, and come to Christ as a sinner?

Ans. Yea, with all thy sins upon thee, even as filthy as ever thou canst.

Quest. But is not this the way to make *Christ* to loath us? * You know when *Children* fall down in the dirt, they do usually before they go home, make their cloaths as clean as they can, for fear their Parents should chide them, and so I think should we?

Ans. This comparison is wrongly applied, if you bring it to shew us how we must do when we come to Christ. He that can make himself clean, hath no need of Christ; for the whole, the clean, and righteous, have no need of *Christ*; but those that are foul and sick. Physicians you know if they love to be honoured, they will not bid the Patients first make themselves whole, and then come to them: no, but bid them come with their sores all running on them, as the woman with her bloody issue, *Mark 5*. And as *Mary Magdalen* with her Belly full of Devils, and the Leppers all scabbed, and that is the right coming to *Jesus Christ*.

Reply. Well, I hope that *Christ* will save me, for his promises and mercy is very large, and as long

long as he hath promised to give us life, I fear my state the less.

Ans. It is very true, *Christ's* promises are very large, blessed be the Lord for ever, and also so is his mercy; but notwithstanding all that, there is many go in at the broad gate; and therefore I say your business is seriously to enquire whether you are under the first or second Covenant; for unless you are under the second, you will never be regarded of the Lord, for as much as you are a sinner, *Heb. 8 9.* And the rather, because if God should be so good to you as to give you a share in the second, you shall have all your sins pardoned; and for certain have eternal life, though you have been a great sinner.

But do not expect that thou shalt have any part or share in the large promises and mercy of God, for the benefit and comfort of thy poor soul, whilst thou art under the *Old Covenant*, because, so long thou art out of *Christ*, through whom God conveyeth his mercy, grace, and love to sinners. *For all the promises of God in him are yea, and in him, Amen.* Indeed his mercy, grace and love, is very great, but it's treasured up in him, given forth in him, through him. *But God who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us — that he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace:* But which way? *In his kindness towards us through Christ Jesus.* But out of *Christ* thou shalt find God, a just God,

God, a sin revenging God, a God that will by no means spare the guilty; and be sure, that every one that is found out of Jesus Christ, will be found guilty in the Judgment day, upon whom the wrath of God shall smoke to their eternal ruine.

Now therefore consider of it, and take the counsel of the Apostle in 2 Cor. 13. 5. Which is to *examine thy self whether thou art in the faith*, and to prove thy own self, whether thou hast received the Spirit of Christ into thy soul, whether thou hast been converted, whether thou hast been born again, and made a new creature, whether thou hast had thy sins washed away in the blood of Christ, whether thou hast been brought from under the *Old Covenant* into the *New*; and do not make a slight examination, for thou hast a precious soul, either to be saved or damned.

And that thou mayest not be deceived, consider that it is one thing to be convinced, and another to be converted; one thing to be wounded, and another to be killed; and so to be made alive by the faith of Jesus Christ. When men are killed they are killed to all things they lived to before, both sin and righteousness, as all their old faith, and supposed grace, that they thought they had. Indeed the *Old Covenant* will shew thee that thou art a sinner, and that a great one too; but the *Old Covenant*, the Law, will

will not shew thee without the help of the spirit that thou art without all grace by nature: no, but in the midst of thy troubles thou wilt keep thy self from coming to *Christ*, by perswading thy soul, that thou art come already, and hast some grace already. O therefore be earnest in begging the spirit, that thy soul may be enlightened, and the wickedness of thy heart discovered, that thou mayest see the miserable state that thou art in, by reason of sin and unbelief, which is the great condemning sin: and so in a sight and sense of thy sad condition (if God should deal with thee in severity according to thy deservings) do thou cry to God for faith in a *Crucified Christ*, that thou mayest have all thy sins washed away in his blood, and such a right work of grace wrought in thy soul, that may stand in the Judgment-day.

Again secondly, In the next place, you know I told you that a man might go a great way in a profession, and have many excellent gifts, so as to do many wondrous works, and yet be but under the Law; from hence you may learn, not to judge your selves to be the children of God, *1 Cor. 1.* because you may have some gifts of knowledge or understanding more than others: no, for thou mayest be the knowingest man in all the Countrey, as to head-knowledge, and yet be but under the Law, and so consequently under the curse, notwithstanding that.

Now

Now seeing it is so, that men may have all this and yet perish; then what will become of those that do no good at all, and have no understanding, neither of their own sadness, nor of Christs mercy. O sad! Read with understanding, *Isa. 27. 11. Therefore he that made them will have mercy on them, and he that formed them, will shew them no favour.* See also *2 Thes. 1. 8, 9.*

Now there is one thing, which for want of, most people do miscarry in a very sad manner; and that is because they are not able to distinguish between the nature of the Law, and the Gospel. O people, people, your being blinded here, as to the knowledge of this, is one great cause of the ruining of many: As Paul saith, *While Moses is read, or while the Law is discovered, the vail is over their hearts,* *2 Cor. 3. 15.* that is, the vail of ignorance is still upon their hearts, so that they cannot discern either the nature of the Law, or the nature of the Gospel, they being so dark and blind in their minds, as you may see, if you compare it with *Chap. 4. 3, 4.* And truly I am confident, that were you but well examined, I doubt many of you would be found so ignorant, that you would not be able to give a word of right answer concerning either the Law, or the Gospel. Nay my Friends, set the case one should ask you what time you spend, what pains you take, to the end you may understand the

the nature and difference of these two Covenants; would you not say (if you should speak the truth) that you did not so much as regard whether there was two or more? would you not say, I did not think of *Covenants* or study the nature of them? I thought that if I had lived honestly, and did as well as I could, that God would accept of me, and have mercy upon me, as he had on others. Ah friends, this is the cause of the ruine of thousands, for if they are blinded to this, both the right use of the Law, and also of the Gospel, is hid from their eyes; and so for certain they will be in danger of perishing most miserably, (poor souls that they are) unless God of his meer mercy and love, doth rend the vail from off their hearts; the vail of ignorance, for that is it which doth keep these poor souls in this besotted and blindfolded condition, in which if they dye, they may be lamented for, but not helped; they may be pittied, but not preserved from the stroak of Gods everlasting vengeance.

In the next place, if you would indeed be delivered from the first into the second Covenant. I do admonish you to the observing of these following particulars.

First,

First, Have a care that you do not content your selves, though you do good works (that is, which in themselves are good) in, and with a Legal Spirit, which are done these ways as followeth.

First, If you do any thing commanded in Scripture, and in your doing of it, do think that God is well pleased therewith, because you, as you are religious men do do the same: upon this mistake was *Paul* himself in danger of being destroyed; for he thought because he was zealous, and one of the strictest sect for Religion, therefore God would have been good unto him, and have accepted his doings, as it is clear, for he counted them his gain, *Philipians* 3. 4, 5, 6, 7, 8.

Now this is done thus. When a man doth think, that because he thinks he is more sincere, more liberal, with more difficulty, or to the weakning of his estate; I say, if a man because of this, doth think that God accepteth his labour, it is done from an *Old Covenant Spirit*.

Again, Some men they think that they shall be heard, because they have prayer in their families, because they can pray long, and speak expressions, or express themselves excellently in prayer, that because they have great enlargements in prayer: I say, that therefore

therefore to think that God doth delight in their doings, and accept their works, this is from a Legal Spirit.

Again, Some men think, that because their Parents have been religious before them, and have been indeed the people of God, they think if they also do as to the outward observing of that which they learned from their fore-runners, that therefore God doth accept them: but this also is from a wrong spirit; and yet how many are there in *England* at this day, that think the better of themselves, meerly upon that account, I, and think the people of God ought to think so too; not understanding that it is ordinary, for an *Eli* to have an *Hophni* and a *Phinehas*, both sons of *Belial*: Also a good *Samuel* to have a perverse off spring; likewise *David* an *Absalom*. I say, their being ignorant of, or else negligent in regarding this; they do think that because they do spring from such and such, as the Jews in their *generations* did, that therefore they have a priviledge with God more than others, when there is no such thing, *John* 8 33, 34, 35. *Mt.* 3 7, 8, 9. but for certain, if the same faith be not in them, which was in their fore-runners, to lay hold of the *Christ* of God, in the same spirit as they did, they must utterly perish, for all their high conceits that they have of themselves.

Secondly,

Secondly, When People come into the presence of God, without having their eye upon their Divine Majesty, through the flesh and blood of the Son of *Mary*, the Son of God; then also do they come before God, and do whatsoever they do from a Legal Spirit, an old Covenant Spirit. As for instance, you have some people, 'tis true, they will go to Prayer (in appearance very fervently) and will plead very hard with God, that he would grant them their desires, pleading their want, and the abundance thereof; they will also plead with God his great mercy, and also his free promises: but yet they neglecting the aforesaid Body, or Person of Christ, the righteous Lamb of God, to appear before him in: I say, in thus doing, they do not appear before the Lord, no otherwayes then in an old Covenant Spirit; for they go to God only as a merciful Creator, and they themselves as his Creatures: not as he is their Father in the Son, and they his children by Regeneration through the Lord Jesus. I, and though they may call God their Father in the Notion (not knowing what they say, only having learned such things by tradition) as the Pharisees did; yet Christ will have his time to say to them, even to their faces, as he did once to the Jews, Your father (for all this your profession) is

the Devil, to their own grief and everlasting misery, *John 8. 44.*

The third thing that is to be observed, if we would not be under the Law, or do things in a Legal Spirit is this: to have a care that we do none of the works of the holy Law of God, for life, or acceptance with him; no, nor of the Gospel neither. To do the works of the Law, to the end we may be accepted of God, or that we may please him, and to have our desires of him, is to do things from a Legal or old Covenant-Spirit, and that is expressly laid down, where it is said, *To him that worketh, is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt*; that is, he appears before God through the Law, and his obedience to it, (*Rom. 4. 4, 5.*) And again, though they be in themselves Gospel-Ordinances, as baptism, breaking of bread, hearing, praying, meditating, or the like: yet, I say, if they be not done in a right Spirit, they are thereby used as a hand by the Devil, to pull thee under the Covenant of Works; as in former times he used circumcision, which was no part of the Covenant of Works, the ten Commands, but a Seal of the righteousness of Faith; yet, I say, they being done in a Legal Spirit, the Soul was thereby brought under the Covenant of Works, and so most miserably destroyed unawares to it self, and that because there was not a right understanding of the nature and terms

terms of the said Covenants. And so it is now. Souls being ignorant of the nature of the old Covenant, do even by their subjecting to several Gospel-ordinances, run themselves under the old Covenant, and fly off from Christ, even when they think they are a coming closer to him: (O miserable !) If you would know when or how this is done, whether in one particular or more, I shall shew you as followeth.

1. That man doth bring himself under the Covenant of Works, by Gospel-Ordinances, when he cannot be persuaded that God will have mercy upon him, except he do yield obedience to such or such a particular thing commanded in the Word: this is the very same spirit that was in the false brethren spoken of, (*Acts 15. Gal. the whole Epistle*) whose judgement was, that unless such and such things were done *they could not be saved*. As now a days we have also some that say, unless your Infants be baptized, they cannot be saved; and others say, unless you be rightly baptized, you have no ground to be assured that you are believers, or members of Churches; which is so far off from being so good as a Legal Spirit, that it is the Spirit of Blasphemy; as is evident, because they do reckon that the Spirit, Righteousness, and Faith of Jesus, and the confession thereof, is not sufficient to declare men to be members of the

Lord Jesus; when on the other side, though they be rank hypocrites, yet if they do yield an outward subjection to this or that, they are counted presently communicable members; which doth clearly discover, that there is not so much honour given to the putting on the righteousness of the Son of God, as there is given to that which a man may do, and yet go to hell within an hour after; nay, in the very doing of it, doth shut himself for ever from Jesus Christ.

2. Men may do things from a Legal or Old Covenant-Spirit, when they content themselves with their doing of such and such a thing; as prayers, reading, hearing, baptism, breaking of bread, or the like; I say, when they can content themselves with the thing done, and sit down at ease and content, because the thing is done. As for instance, some men, they being persuaded that such and such a thing is their duty, and that unless they do it, God will not be pleased with them, nor suffer them to be heirs of his kingdom; they from this spirit do rush into, and do the thing, which being done, they are content, as being persuaded, that now they are without doubt in a happy condition, because they have done such things, like unto the Pharisee, who because he had done this and the other thing, said therefore, in a bragging way, *Lord, I thank thee that*

that I am not as this Publican ; for I have done thus and thus : when alas, the Lord gives him never a good word for his labour, but rather a reproof.

3. That man doth act from a Legal Spirit, who maketh the strictness of his walking the ground of his assurance for eternal life. Some men, all the ground they have to believe that they shall be saved, it is, because they walk not so loose as their neighbours, they are not so bad as others are, and therefore they question not but that they shall do well ; now this is a false ground, and a thing that is verily Legal, and favours only of some slight and shallow apprehensions of the Old Covenant (I call them shallow apprehensions,) because they are not right and sound, and are such as will do the Soul no good, but beguile it, in that the knowledge of the nature of this Covenant doth not appear to the Soul, only some commanding power it hath on the Soul, which the Soul endeavouring to give up it self unto, it doth find some peace and content, and especially if it find it self to be pretty willing to yield it self to its commands ; and is not this the very ground of thy hoping that God will save thee from the wrath to come ? If one should ask thee what ground thou hast to think thou shalt be saved ; wouldst thou not say : truly because I have left my sins, and because I am more inclinable

Do not think
that I am
against the or-
der of the Gos-
pel.

to do good, and to learn, and get
more knowledge, I endeavour to
walk in Church order (as they call
it) and therefore I hope God
hath done a good work for me,
and I hope will save my soul.

Alas, alas, this is a very trick of the Devil,
to make Souls build the ground of their sal-
vation upon this their strictness, and abstaining
from the wickedness of their former lives, and
because they desire to be stricter, and stricter.
Now if you would know such a man or wo-
man, you shall find them in this frame;
namely, when they think their hearts are good
then they think also that Christ will have
mercy upon them: but when their corrupti-
ons work, then they doubt and scruple, untill
again they have their hearts more ready to
do the things contained in the Law and Ordina-
nces of the Gospel. Again, such men do com-
monly cheer up their hearts, and encourage
themselves still to hope all shall be well, and
that because they are not so bad as the rest,
but more inclinable than they, saying, *I am
glad I am not as this Publican, but better than
he, more righteous than he,* Luke 18. 11.

4. That is a Legal and Old Covenant-
Spirit, that secretly persuades the Soul, that if
ever it will be saved by Christ, it must first
be fitted for Christ, by its getting of a good
heart

heart and good intentions to do this and that for Christ: I say, that the Soul when it comes to Christ may not be rejected, or turned off, when indeed and in truth, this is the very way for the Soul to turn it self from Jesus Christ, instead of turning to him; for such a Soul looks upon Christ, rather to be a painted Saviour or a Cipher, then a very, and real Saviour. Friend, if thou canst fit thy self, what need hast thou of Christ? If thou canst get qualifications to carry to Christ, that thou mightest be accepted, thou doest not look to be *accepted in the beloved*. Shall I tell thee? thou art as if a man should say, I will make my self clean, and then I will go to Christ that he may wash me; or like to a man possessed, that will first cast the Devils out of himself, and then come to Christ for cure for him. Thou must therefore, if thou wilt so lay hold of Christ, as not to be rejected by him, I say thou must come to him as the basest in the world, more fitter to be damned, if thou hadst thy right, then to have the least smile, hope, or comfort from him: come with the fire of hell in thy conscience; come with thy heart hard, dead, cold, full of wickedness and madness against thy own Salvation; come as renouncing all thy tears, prayers, watchings, fastings; come as a blood-red sinner; do not stay from Christ, till thou hast a greater sense

of thy own misery, nor of the reality of Gods mercy; do not stay while thy heart is softer, and thy spirit in a better frame, but go against thy mind, and against the mind of the Devil and Sin, throw thy self down at the foot of Christ, with a halter about thy neck, and say, Lord Jesus, hear a sinner, a hard-hearted sinner, a sinner that deserveth to be damned, to be cast to hell; and resolve never to return, or to give over crying unto him, till thou do find that he hath washed thy Conscience from dead works with his blood ver-
tually, and clothed thee with his own righteousness, and made thee compleat in himself; this is the way to come to Christ.

The Use for the second Doctrine.

Now a few words to the second Doctrine, and so I shall draw towards a conclusion; The Doctrine doth contain in it very much comfort to thy Soul, who art a new Covenant-man, or one of those who art under the New Covenant.

There is first pardon of sin. And secondly, the manifestation of the same. And thirdly, a power to cause thee to persevere through Faith to the very end of thy life.

There is first pardon of sin, which is not in the Old Covenant; for in that there is nothing but commands, and if not obeyed, condemned. O, but there is pardon of sin, even of all thy
sins,

sins, against the first and second Covenant, under which thou art, and that freely, upon the account of Jesus Christ the righteous, he having in thy name, nature, and in the room of thy person, fulfilled all the whole Law in himself for thee, and freely giveth it unto thee: O, though the Law be a ministration of death and condemnation, yet the Gospel, under which thou art, is the ministration of life and salvation, 2 Cor. 3. 6, 7, 8, 9. Though they that live and dye under the first Covenant, God regardeth them not, Heb. 8. 9. Yet they that are under the second are as the apple of his Eye, Deut. 32. 10. Psal. 17. 8. Zech. 2. 8. Though they that are under the first, the Law, are called to blackness, and darkness, and tempest, the sound of a Trumpet, and a burning Mountain, which sight was so terrible, that Moses said, I exceedingly fear, and quake, Heb. 12. 18, 19, 20, 21. Yet you are come unto Mount Zion, to the City of the living God, to the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of Angels: To the general assembly and Church of the first born, whose names are written in heaven, and to God the judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect; And to Jesus (to blessed Jesus) the Mediator of the New Covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, which speaketh better things than that of Abel. Heb. 12. 22, 23, 24. even forgiveness of sins, Eph. 1. 7.

266 *The Use of the New Covenant.*

2. The Covenant that thou art under doth allow of Repentance, in case thou chance to slip or fall, by sudden Temptation, (*Rev. 2. 5.*) but the Law allows of none, (*Gal. 3. 10.*) The Covenant that thou art under allows thee strength also; but the Law is only a sound of words, commanding Words, but no Power is given by them to fulfill the things commanded, *Heb. 12. 19.* Thou that art under this second, art made a Son; but they that are under that first, are Slaves and Vagabonds, *Gen. 4. 12.* Thou that art under this hast a Mediator, that is to stand between Justice and thee, *1 Tim. 2. 5.* But they under the other, their Mediator is turned an Accuser, and speaketh most bitter things against their Souls, *John 5. 45.* Again, the way that thou hast into Paradise, is a new and living way; mark, a living way, *Heb. 10. 20.* But they that are under the Old Covenant, their way into Paradise is a killing and destroying way, *Gen. 3. 24.* Again, thou hast the Righteousness of God to appear before God withall, *Phil. 3. 9.* But they under the Old Covenant have nothing but the Righteousness of the Law, which *Paul* counts dirt and dung, *Phil. 3. 7, 8.* Thou hast that which will make thee perfect; but the other will not do so, *Heb. 7. 19.* *The Law makes nothing perfect; but the bringing in of a better Hope* (which

(which is the Son of God) *did, by which we draw nigh to God.*

3. The New Covenant promiseth thee a new Heart, (as I said before) *Ezek. 36. 26.* but the Old Covenant promiseth none; and a new Spirit, but the Old Covenant promiseth none. The New Covenant conveyeth Faith, *Gal. 3.* but the Old one conveyeth none. Through the New Covenant the Love of God is conveyed into the Heart, *Rom. 5.* but through the Old Covenant there is conveyed none of it savingly through Jesus Christ. The New Covenant doth not only give a Promise of Life, but also with that, the assurance of Life; but the old one giveth none. The old Covenant wrought Wrath in us, and to us, *Rom. 4. 15.* but the new one worketh Love, *Gal. 5. 6.* Thus much for the first use.

Secondly, As all these, and many more Priviledges, do come to thee through, or by the New Covenant; and that thou mightest not doubt of the Certainty of these glorious Priviledges, God hath so ordered it, that they do all come to thee by way of Purchase being obtained for thee, ready to thy hand, by that one Man Jesus, who is the Mediator, or the Person that hath principally to do, both with God and thy Soul, in the things pertaining to this Covenant: so
that

that now thou mayest look on all the glorious things that are spoken of in the New Covenant, and say, all these must be mine; I must have a share in them; Christ hath purchased them for me, and given them to me. Now I need not to say, O! but how shall I come by them? God is holy, I am a sinner; God is just, and I have offended: no, but thou mayest say, though I am vile and deserve nothing, yet Christ is holy, and he serveth all things; though I have so provoked God by breaking his Law, that he could not in justice look upon me, yet Christ hath so gloriously paid the debt, that now God can say, Welcome Soul, I will give thee grace, I will give thee glory, thou shalt lie in my bosom, and go no more out; my Son hath pleased me, he hath satisfied the loud cries of the Law and Justice, that called for speedy vengeance on thee. He Dan. 9. 24, 25. hath fulfilled the whole Law, he hath brought in everlasting righteousness, he hath overcome the Devil, he hath washed away thy sins with his most precious blood, he hath destroyed 1st Cor. 15. 55, the power of death, and triumphs over all the Enemies. 56, 57. This he did in his own person, as a common Jesus, for all persons, in their stead, even for so many as shall come in to him; for

for his victory I give to them, his righteousness I give to them, his merits I bestow on them, and look upon them holy, harmless, undefiled, and for ever comely in my Eye, through the victory of the Captain of their Salvation.

And that thou mayest indeed and in truth, not only hear and read this glorious Doctrine, but be found one that hath the life of it in thy heart, thou must be much in studying of the two Covenants; the nature of the one and the nature of the other, and the conditions of them that are under them both. Also thou must be well grounded in the manner of the Victory and Merits of Christ, how they are made thine. And here thou must in the first place believe, *that the Babe that was Born of Mary, lay in a Manger at Bethlehem, in the time of Cæsar Augustus; that he, that Babe, that Child, was the very Christ.* Secondly, thou must believe that in the days of *Tiberias Cæsar*, when *Herod was Tetrarch of Galilee*, and *Pontius Pilate Governour of Judea*, that in those days he was crucified, or hanged on a tree between two Thieves, which by computation, or according to the best account, is above sixteen hundred years since. Thirdly, thou must also believe, that when he did hang upon that Cross of Wood, on the Mount *Calvary*, that then he did dye there

* for

* This is the Doctrine that I will live and dye by, and be willing to be damned if it saves me not. I am not ashamed of the Gospel of Christ, for it is the power of God to Salvation; therefore I preach Christ Crucified, to the Jews a stumbling-block, and to the Greeks foolishness. *Rom. 1.*

1 *Cor. 1.*

* for the sins of those that did dye before he was Crucified; also for their sins that were alive at the time of his Crucifying, and al-

so, that he did by that one death give satisfaction to God for all those that should be born and believe in him after his death, even unto the Worldsend. I say, this thou must believe upon pain of eternal Damnation, that by that one death, that when he did dye, he did put an end to the curse of the Law and Sin, and at that time by his death on the Cross, and by his Resurrection out of *Joseph's* Sepulchre, he did bring in a sufficient Righteousness to clothe thee withall compleatly. For by one offering he hath for ever perfected them that are sanctified, not that he should often offer himself; for then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the World: but now ONCE in the end of the World hath he appeared to put (or do) away Sin by the sacrifice of himself. Namely, when he hanged on the Cross. For it is by the offering up of the Body of (this blessed) *Jesus Christ* ONCE for all. Indeed, other Priests may offer oftentimes Sacrifices and Offerings

The Use of the New Covenant. 271

Heb. 10. 14. *offerings which can never take away*
Heb. 9. 24, 25. *Sins; but this Man (this Jesus, this*
annointed and appointed sacrifice) when he had offered ONE sacrifice for sins,
for ever sat down on the right hand of God.

But because thou in thy pursuit after the faith of the Gospel wilt be sure to meet with devils, hereticks, particular corruptions, as unbelief, ignorance, the spirit works, animated on by suggestions, false conclusions, with damnable doctrines, I shall therefore briefly, besides what hath been already said, speak a word or two more before I leave thee, of further advice, especially concerning these two things.

First, How thou art to conceive of the Saviour.

Secondly, How thou art to make application of him.

First, For the Saviour, thou must look upon him to be very God and very Man; not man only, nor God only, but God and Man in one Person, both natures joyned together, for the putting of him in a capacity to be a suitable Saviour: suitable, I say, to answer both sides and parties with whom he hath to do in the office of his Mediatorship, and being as a Saviour.

Secondly, Thou must not only do this, but thou must also consider and believe, that
even

272 *The Use of the New Covenant.*

even what was done by Jesus Christ, it was not done by ~~one~~ nature without the other: but thou must consider that both natures, both the God-head and the man-hood did gloriously concur and joyn together in the undertaking of the Salvation of our Bodies and Souls; not that the God-head undertook any thing without the Man-hood, neither did the Man-hood do any thing without the Vertue and Union of the God head; and thou must of Necessity do this, otherwise thou canst not find any sound ground and footing for thy Soul to rest upon.

For if thou look upon any of these asunder, that is to say, the God-head without the Man-hood, or the Man-hood without the God-head, thou wilt conclude that what was done by the God-head, was not done for man, being done without the Man-hood; or else, that that which was done with the Man-hood could not answer Divine Justice, in not doing what it did, by the Vertue and in Union with the God-head; for it was the God-head that gave Vertue and Value to the suffering of the Man-hood, and the Man-hood being joyned therewith, that giveth us an interest into the heavenly glory and comforts of the God-head.

What ground can a man have to believe that Christ is his Saviour, if he do not believe that he suffered for Sin in his Nature.
And

And what ground also can a man have to think that God the Father is satisfied; being infinite; if he believe not also that he who gave the satisfaction was equal to him who was offended.

Therefore, Beloved, when you read of the offering of the Body of the Son of Man for our Sins, then Consider, that he did it in Union with; and by the help of the eternal God-head. *How much more shall the Blood of Christ, who, through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God; purge your Consciences from dead Works, &c.*

And when thou readest of the glorious Works and splendour of the God-head in Christ; then consider that all that was done by the God-head, it was done as it had union and communion with the Man-hood. And then thou shalt see that the Devil is overcome by God-man; Sin, Death, Hell, the Grave, and all overcome by Jesus; God-man. And then thou shalt find them overcome indeed. They must needs be overcome when God doth overcome them; and we have good ground to hope the Victory is ours; when in our Nature they are overcome.

2. The second thing is, how to apply; or to make application of this Christ to the Soule. And for this there is to be considered the following particulars.

T

First,

174 The Use of the New Covenant.

1. First, that when Jesus Christ did thus appear, being born of Mary, he was looked upon by the Father, as if the sin of the whole World was upon him; yea further, God did look upon him, and account him the Sin of *Mario* *He hath made him to be Sin for us,* 2 Cor. 5: 21. That is, God made his Son Jesus Christ our Sin, or reckoned him to be, not only a Sinner; but the very hülle of Sin of the whole World, and condemned him so severely as if he had been nothing but Sin. For what the Law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sent forth his Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for Sin condemned Sin in the flesh. That is, for our Sins condemned his Son Jesus Christ: as if he had indeed and in truth been our very Sin; and yet altogether without Sin, 2 Cor. 5: 21. Rom. 8: 3. Therefore, as to the taking away of thy Curse, thou must reckon him to be made Sin for thee. And as to his being thy Justification, thou must reckon him to be thy Righteousness; for, saith the Scripture, *He (that is God) hath made HIM to be SIN for us, though he knew no Sin, that we might be made the RIGHTEOUSNESS of God in HIM.* ROM. 8: 3.

2. Secondly, Consider for whose sake all this glorious design of the Father and the Son was brought to pass, and that you shall find to be for Man, for sinful Man, 2 Cor. 8: 9.

T

Thirdly,

Thirdly, The terms on which it is made out; and that you will find to be a free gift, meerly arising from the tender-heartedness of God. *You are justified freely by his Grace through the Redemption that is in Christ, whom God hath set forth to be a Propitiation through Faith in his Blood, &c.*

Fourthly, How men are to reckon it theirs, and that is upon the same terms which God doth offer it, which is freely, as they are worthless and undeserving Creatures, as they are without all good, and also unable to do any good. This, I say, is the right way of applying the merits of Christ to thy Soul, for they are freely given to thee a poor Sinner, not for any thing that is in thee, or done by thee; but freely, as thou art a Sinner, and so standest in absolute need thereof.

And Christian, thou art not in this thing to follow thy sense and feeling: but the very Word of God. The thing that doth do the People of God the greatest injury, it is their too little hearkning to what the Gospel saith, and their too much giving credit to what the Law, Sin, the Devil, and Conscience saith: and upon this very ground to conclude, that because there is the certainty of guilt upon the Soul, therefore there is also for certain, by Sin, Damnation to be brought upon the Soul. This is now to set the Word of

276 *The Use of the New Covenant.*

God aside, and to give credit to what is formed by the contrary: but thou must give more credit to one syllable of the written Word of the Gospel, than thou must give to all the Saints and Angels in Heaven and Earth; much more than to the Devil and thy own guilty Conscience.

Let me give you a Parable. There was a certain man that had committed Treason against his King; but, for as much as the King had Compassion upon him, he sent him by the hand of a faithful Messenger, a Pardon under his own Hand and Seal: but in the Countrey where this poor man dwelt, there was also many that sought to trouble him, by often putting of him in mind of his Treason, and the Law that was to be executed on the Offender. Now which way should this man so honour his King, but as believing his Hand-writing, which was the Pardon: certainly he would honour him more by so doing, than to regard all the Clamours of his Enemies continually against him.

Just thus it is here, thou having committed Treason against the King of Heaven; he, through Compassion for Christs sake, hath sent thee a Pardon: but the Devil, the Law, and thy Conscience, do continually seek to disturb thee; by bringing thy Sins afresh into thy remembrance: But now, wouldest thou honour

honour thy King, why then, *He that believeth the RECORD that God hath given of his Son, hath set to his SEAL that God is true. And this is the Record, that God hath given to US eternal Life: and this Life is in his Son.* 1 Joh. 5. 11, 12. And therefore, my Brethren, seeing God our Father hath sent us damnable Traitors a Pardon from Heaven (even all the Promises of the Gospel) and also hath sealed to the certainty of it with the heart-blood of his dear Son: let us not be daunted, though our Enemies with terrible-Voices do bring our former life never so often into our Remembrance.

Object. But, saith the Soul, how if after I have received a Pardon I should commit Treason again? What should I do then?

Answ. Set the case thou hast committed abundance of Treason, he hath by him abundance of Pardons. *Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts, and let him return to the Lord, and he will have mercy upon him, and to our God, for he will abundantly pardon.*

Sometimes I my self have been in such a straight, that I have been (almost) driven to my Wits ends with a sight and sense of the greatness of my sins: but calling to mind that God was God in his Mercy, Pity, and Love; as well as in his Holiness, Justice, &c.

And again, considering the ability of the satisfaction that was given to Holiness and Justice, to the end there might be way made for Sinners to lay hold of this Mercy; I say, I considering this, when tempted to doubt and despair, I have answered in this manner.

“ Lord, here is one of the greatest Sinners
 “ that ever the the ground bare. A Sinner a-
 “ gainst the Law, and a Sinner against the Gos-
 “ pel. I have sinned against Light, and I have
 “ sinned against Mercy; and now Lord, the
 “ guilt of them breaks my heart, the Devil also
 “ he would have me despair, telling of me that
 “ thou art so far from hearing my Prayers in
 “ this my distress, that I cannot anger thee
 “ worse, then to call upon thee; for, saith he,
 “ thou art resolved for ever to damn and not
 “ to grant me the least of thy favour: yet
 “ Lord, I would fain have forgiveness. And thy
 “ word, though much may be inferred from it
 “ against me; yet it saith, *If I come unto thee*
 “ *thou wilt in no wise cast me out.* Lord, shall
 “ I honour thee most by believing thou canst
 “ pardon my Sins, or by believing thou canst
 “ not? Shall I honour thee most by believing
 “ thou wilt pardon my Sins, or by believing
 “ thou wilt not? Shall I honour the Blood
 “ of thy Son also by despairing, that the ver-
 “ tue thereof is not sufficient, or by believing
 “ that it is sufficient to purge me from all my
 blood-red

" blood-red and crimson Sins; *Joseph*, thou
 " that couldest find so much Mercy as to par-
 " don *Manasseh*, *Mary Magdalen*, the three
 " thousand Murderers, persecuting *Paul*,
 " Murderous and Adulterous *David*, and
 " blaspheming *Peter*; thou that offeredst Mer-
 " cy to *Simon Magus*, a Witch, and didst re-
 " ceive the Astrologers and Conjurers in the
 " nineteenth of *Acts*, thou hast Mercy enough
 " for one poor sinner. Lord, set the case my
 " Sins were bigger than all these, and I less
 " deserved Mercy than any of these: yet thou
 " hast said in thy word, that he that cometh
 " to thee, thou wilt in no wise cast out. And
 God hath given comfort to my Soul, even to
 such a Sinner as I am; and I tell you, there
 is no way so to honour God, and to beat out
 the Devil, as to stick to the truth of Gods
 Word, and the merits of Christs Blood by
 believing. When *Abraham* believed (even
 against hope and reason) he gave Glory to
 God, Rom. 4. And this is our Victory, even our
 Faith. Believe, and all things are possible to you.
 He that believeth shall be saved. He that belie-
 veth on the Son hath everlasting Life, and shall
 never perish, neither shall any man pluck them
 out of my Fathers Hands. 1 Joh. 5. 4.

And if thou dost indeed believe this, thou
 wilt not only confess him as the Quakers do;
 That is, that he was born at *Bethlehem* of

Mary, suffered on Mount Calvary under Pontius Pilate, was Dead and Buried, Rose again, and Ascended, &c. For all this they confess, and in the midst of their confession they do verily deny that his Death on that Mount Calvary did give satisfaction to God for the Sins of the World; and that his Resurrection out of *Josephs Sepulchre*, is the cause of our Justification in the sight of God, Angels, and Devils: But, I say, if thou dost believe these things indeed, thou dost believe that then, so long ago, even before thou wast born, he did bear thy Sins in his own Body, which then was Hanged on the Tree, (and never before nor since) that thy old Man was then Crucified with him, namely, in the same Body then Crucified, (see *1 Pet. 2. 24.* and *Rom. 6. 6.*) This is non-sense to them that believe not: but if thou dost indeed believe, thou seest it so plain, and yet such a Mystery, that it makes thee wonder.

But in the third Place, this glorious Doctrine of the New Covenant, and the Mediator thereof, will serve for the comforting, and the maintaining of the comfort of the Children of the New Covenant this way also; that is, that he did not only dye and rise again, but that he did ascend in his own Person into Heaven, to take possession thereof for me, to prepare a Place there for me, standeth there
in

in the second part of his Succubusprobing me
safe in my coming thither; and so present me
in a glorious manner, ~~with him, spirit or corpore, for~~
~~any such thing~~; that he is here exercising of his
Priestly Office for me, pleading the perfection
of his own Righteousness for me, and the ver-
tue of his Blood for me. That he is here rea-
dy to answer the Accusations of the Law,
Devil, and Sin for me. Here thou mayest
through Faith look the very Devil in the
Face and Rejoyce, saying, O Satan! I have
a precious Jesus, a Soul comforting Jesus, a
Sin-pardoning Jesus. Here thou mayest hear
the biggest thunder-crack that the Law can
give, and yet not be daunted. Here thou
mayest say, O Law! thou may'st roar against
Sin, but thou can'st not reach me, thou may'st
Curse and Condemn, but not my Soul; for
I have a righteous Jesus, a holy Jesus, a Soul-
saving Jesus; and he hath delivered me from
thy Threats, from thy Curses, from thy Con-
demnations; I am out of thy reach, and out
of thy bounds, I am brought into another
Covenant, under better promises, promises of
Life and Salvation, free promises to comfort me
without my Merit, even through the Blood
of Jesus, the satisfaction given to God for me
by him; therefore, though thou lay'st my
Sins to my charge, and sayest thou wilt prove
me Guilty: yet so long as Christ is above
the ground,

ground; and hath brought in everlasting righteousness, and given that to me, I shall not fear thy threats, thy charges, thy Soul-fearing Denunciations; my Christ is all, hath done all, and will deliver me from all that thou, and whatsoever else can bring an Accusation against me. Thus also thou may'st say, when Death assaileth thee, *O Death, where is thy sting?* Thou may'st bite indeed, but thou canst not devour; I have comfort by, and through the one Man Jesus; Jesus Christ, he hath taken thee Captive, and taken away thy strength, he hath pierced thy Heart, and let out all thy Soul-destroying Poyson; therefore, though I see thee, I am not afraid of thee; though I feel thee, I am not daunted, thou hast lost thy sting in the side of the Lord Jesus; through him I overcome thee, and set foot upon thee. Also, *O Satan!* though I hear thee grumble, and make a hellish Noise, and tho thou threaten me very highly; yet my Soul shall Triumph over thee; so long as Christ is alive, and can be heard in Heaven; so long as he hath broken thy Head, and won the field of thee; so long as thou art in Prison, and canst not have thy desire. I therefore, when I hear thy Voice, do pitch my Thoughts on Christ my Saviour, and do hearken what he will say, for he will speak comfort; he saith, he hath got the Victory, and doth give to me the Crown, and causeth me to Triumph through his most glorious Conquest.

Nay,

Nay, my Brethren, the Saints under the Levitical Law, who had not the New Covenant sealed, or confirmed any further than by promise that it should be; * I say, they, when they thought of the glorious Privileges that God had promised should come, though at that time they were not come; but seen afar off, how confidently were they persuaded of them, and embraced them, and were so fully satisfied as touching the certainty of them, that they did not stick at the parting with all for the enjoying of them. *Heb. II.* How many times doth *David* in the *Psalms* admire, triumph, and persuade others to do so also, through the Faith that he had in the thing that was to be done. Also *Job*, in what Faith doth he say he should see his Redeemer, though he had not then shed one drop of Blood for him: yet because he had promised so to do; and this was signified * by the blood of Bulls and Goats: Also *Samuel*, *Isaiah*, *Jeremiah*, *Zechariah*, &c. how gloriously in confidence did they speak of Christ and his Death, Blood, Conquest, and everlasting Priest-hood, even before he did manifest him-

* Shall not we then that see all things already done before us, make it a strong Argument to increase our Faith.

* For they were so many sure promises with remembrance in them, also for the better satisfaction of them that believed them.

self

self in the flesh which he took of the Virgin. We that have lived since Christ, have more ground to hope than they under the Old Covenant had, (though they had the Word of the Just God for the ground of their Faith :) Mark, They had only the Promise that he should and would come ; but we have the assured fulfilling of those Promises, because he is come : they were told that he should spill his Blood, but we do see he hath spilt his Blood : They ventured all upon his standing Surety for them, but we see he hath fulfilled, and that faithfully too, the Office of his Suretiship, in that, according to the engagement, he hath redeemed us poor Sinners. They ventured on the New Covenant, though not actually Sealed, only *because they judged him faithfull that had promised*, Heb. 11. 11. but we have the Covenant Sealed, all things are compleatly done, even as sure as the Heart-Blood of a crucified Jesus can make it.

There is as great a difference between their Dispensation and ours for comfort, even as much as there is between the making of a Bond with a promise to Seal it, and the sealing of the same. It was made indeed in their time, but it was not sealed untill the time the Blood was shed on the Mount *Calvary* ; and that we might have our Faith mount up with Wings like an Eagle, he sheweth us what encouragement,

ment, and ground of Faith we have to conclude we shall be everlastingly delivered; saying, Heb. 9. 16, 17, 18. *For where a Testament (or Covenant) is, there must of necessity be the Death of the Testator; for a Testament is of force after men are dead; otherwise it is of no strength at all while the Testator liveth; whereupon neither the first Testament was dedicated without Blood.* As Christ's Blood was the Confirmation of the New Covenant, yet it was not sealed in Abraham, Isaac, or Jacob's days; to confirm the Covenant that God did tell them of, and yet they believed; therefore we ought to give the more earnest heed to (believe) the things that we have heard, and not in any wise to let them be questioned; and the rather, because you see the Testament is not only now made but confirmed: not only spoken of and promised, but verily sealed by the death and blood of Jesus, which is the Testator thereof.

My Brethren, I would not have you ignorant of this one thing, that though the Jews had the promise of a sacrifice, of an everlasting high Priest that should deliver them, yet they had but the Promise; for Christ was not sacrificed, and was not then come an High Priest of good things to come: only the Type, the Shadow, the Figure, the Ceremonies they had, together with Christ's engaging
as

as Surety to bring all things to pass that was promised should come, and upon that account received and saved.

It was with them and their dispensation as this similitude gives you to understand. "Set the case that there be two men who make a covenant, that the one should give the other ten thousand Sheep, on condition the other give him two thousand pound: but for as much as the Money is not to be paid down presently; therefore if he that buyeth the Sheep will have any of them before the day of payment, the Creditor requesteth a Surety, and upon the engagement of the Surety there is part of the Sheep given to the Debtor, even before the day of payment, but the other at and after. So it is here, Christ covenanted with his Father for his Sheep, (*I lay down my Life for my Sheep*, saith he) but the Money was not to be paid down so soon as the bargain was made, (as I have already said) yet some of the Sheep were saved, even before the Money was paid, and that because of the suretiship of Christ: as it is written, *Being justified (or saved) freely by his Grace, through the Redemption (or purchase) of Jesus Christ, whom God hath set forth to be a Propitiation through Faith in his Blood to declare himself righteous, in his forgiving the Sins that are past, (or the Sinners who*

who died in the Faith, before Christ was crucified, through Gods forbearing till the payment was paid; to declare, I say, at this time his Righteousness, that he might be Just, and the Justifier of him that believeth in Jesus. Rom. 3. 24. 25. 26.

The end of my speaking of this, is to shew you that, it is not wisdom now to doubt whether God will save you or no, but to believe, because all things are finished as to our Justification. The Covenant not only made, but also sealed; the Debt paid, the Prison Doors flung off of the Hooks, with a Proclamation from Heaven of Deliverance to the Prisoners of Hope; saying, Return to the strong hold, ye Prisoners of Hope, even to day do I declare (saith God) that I will render unto thee double. Zech. 9. 12. And, saith Christ, when he was come, The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the Gospel; (that is, good Tidings to the Poor, that their Sins shall be pardoned, that their Souls shall be saved) He hath sent me to bind up the broken hearted, to preach deliverance to the Captives, and recovering of the Sight of the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, and to comfort them that mourn, to preach the acceptable Year of the Lord. Luke 4. 18, 19.

Therefore, here Soul thou may'st come to Jesus Christ for any thing thou wantest, as to a common Treasure-house, being the principal

pal Man for the distributing of the things made mention of in the New Covenant, he having them all in his own custody by right of Purchase: for he hath bought them all, paid for them all. Dost thou want Faith, then come for it to the Man Christ Jesus? *Heb. 12. 2.* Dost thou want the Spirit, then ask it of Jesus? Dost thou want Wisdom? Dost thou want Grace of any sort? Dost thou want a new Heart? Dost thou want strength against thy Lusts, against the Devils Temptations? Dost thou want strength to carry thee thorow afflictions of Body, and afflictions of Spirit, through Persecutions? Wouldest thou willingly hold out, stand to the last, and be more than a Conquerour, then be sure thou meditate enough on the Merits of the Blood of Jesus, how he hath undertaken for thee, that he hath done the work of thy Salvation in thy room, that he is filled of God on purpose to fill thee, and is willing to communicate whatsoever is in him, or about him, to thee. Consider this, I say, and Triumph in it.

Again, This may inform us of the safe state of the Saints, as touching their Perseverance, that they shall stand though Hell rages, tho' the Devil reareth, and all the World endeavoureth the ruine of the Saints of God; tho' some, through ignorance of the vertue of the offering of the Body of Jesus Christ, do say, a
man

man may be a child of God to day, and a child of the Devil to morrow, which is gross ignorance; for what is the Bloud of Christ, the Death, the Resurrection of Christ, of no more vertue than to bring in for us an uncertain Salvation; or must the effectualness of Christs merits, as touching our Perseverance, be helped on by the doings of Man: surely they that are predestinated, are also justified, and they that are justified, they shall be glorified, *Rom. 8. 30.* Saints, do not doubt of the salvation of your Souls, unless you do intend to undervalue Christs Blood; and do not think but that he that hath begun the good work of his grace in you, will perfect it, to the second coming of our Lord Jesus, *Phil. 1. 6.* Should not we as well as *Paul*, say, I am persuaded that nothing shall separate us from the love of God which is in Christ Jesus; *Rom. 8.* O let the Saints know! that unless the Devil can pluck Christ out of Heaven, he cannot pull a true Believer out of Christ. When I say a true Believer, I do mean such a one as hath the Faith of the Operation of God in his Soul.

Lastly, Is there such Mercy as this? such Priviledges as these? is there so much ground of Comfort? and so much cause to be Glad? Is there so much store in Christ? And such a ready heart in him to give it to me? Hath

his bleeding Wounds so much in them, as that the Fruits thereof should be the Salvation of my Soul? Of my sinful Soul? As to save me, sinful, me rebellious, me desperate, me, what then? Shall not I now be holy? Shall not I now study, strive, and lay out my self for him that hath laid out himself Soul and Body for me? Shall I now love ever a Lust or Sin? Shall I now be ashamed of the Cause, Waves, People, or Saints of Jesus Christ? Shall I not now yield my Members as Instruments of Righteousness, seeing my end is everlasting Life? *Rom. 6.* Shall Christ think nothing too dear for me? And shall I count any thing too dear for him? Shall I grieve him with my foolish Carriage? Shall I slight his Counsel by following of my own Will? Thus therefore the Doctrine of the New Covenant doth call for Holiness, engage to Holiness, and maketh the Children of that Covenant to take Pleasure therein. Let no man therefore conclude on this, that the Doctrine of the Gospel is a licentious Doctrine: but if they do, it is because they are Fools, and such as have not tasted of the Vertue of the Blood of Jesus Christ; neither did they ever feel the Nature, and Sway that the Love of Christ hath in the Hearts of his. And thus also you may see that the Doctrine of the Gospel is of great Advantage to the People of God, that

are

are already come in, or to them that shall at the consideration hereof be willing to come in to partake of the glorious Benefits of this glorious Covenant. But saith the poor Soul.

Object. Alas I doubt this is too good for me.

Inquir. Why so I pray you?

Object. Alas, because I am a Sinner.

Reply. Why, all this is bestowed upon none but Sinners, as it is written. *While we were ungodly, Christ died for us, Rom. 5. 6. 8. He came into the World to save Sinners, 1 Tim.*

1. 14, 15.

Object. O, but I am one of the chief of Sinners.

Reply. Why, this is for the chief of Sinners, (*1 Tim. 1. 14, 15.*) *Christ Jesus came into the World to save Sinners, of whom I am chief, (saith Paul.)*

Object. O, but my Sins are so big, that I cannot conceive how I should have Mercy.

Reply. Why Soul? Didst thou ever kill any Body?

Didst thou ever burn any of thy Children in the Fire to Idols? Hast thou been a Witch? Didst thou ever use Enchantments and Conjuratation? Didst thou ever curse and swear, and deny Christ? And yet if thou hast, there is yet hopes of Pardon; yea, such Sinners as these have been pardoned, as appears

You that are resolved to go on in your Sins, meddle not with this.

by these and the like Scriptures, 2 *Chron.* 33. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9. Verses, compared with the 12, 13. Again, *Acts* 19. 19, 20. *Acts* 8. 22. compared with Verse 9. *Matth.* 26. 74, 75.

Ob. But though I have not sinned such kind of Sins ; yet it may be I have sinned as bad.

Answ. That cannot likely be ; yet though thou hast, still there is ground of Mercy for thee, for as much as thou art under the Promise, *John* 6. 37.

Object. Alas man, I am afraid that I have sinned the unpardonable Sin, and therefore there is no hope for me.

Answ. Dost thou know what the unpardonable Sin (the Sin against the Holy Ghost) is ? And when it is committed ?

Reply. It is a Sin against Light.

Answ. That is true : yet every Sin against Light, is not the Sin against the Holy Ghost.

Reply. Say you so.

Answ. Yea, and I prove it thus. If every Sin against Light, had been the Sin that is unpardonable, then had *David* and *Peter* and others sinned that Sin : but though they did sin against Light, yet they did not sin that sin ; therefore every Sin against Light is not the Sin against the Holy Ghost, the unpardonable Sin.

Object.

Objett. But the Scripture saith, *If we sin wilfully after we have received the knowledge of the Truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for Sin: but a certain fearful looking for of Judgment, and fiery Indignation, which shall devour the Adversaries.*

Ans. Do you know what that wilful Sin is?

Reply. Why, What is it? Is it not for a man to sin willingly after enlightning?

1 *Ans.* Yes, yet doubtless every willing Sin is not that; for then David had sinned it, when he lay with Bathsheba, and Jonah when he fled from the Presence of the Lord, and Solomon also when he had so many Concubines.

2 *Ans.* But that Sin is a Sin that is of another nature, which is this; For a man after he hath made some Profession of Salvation to come alone by the Blood of Jesus, together with some Light and Power of the same upon his Spirit: I say, for him after this, knowingly, wilfully, and despitefully, to trample upon the Blood of Christ shed on the Cross, and to count it an unholy thing, or no better then the Blood of another man; and rather to venture his Soul any other way, then to be saved by this precious Blood. And this must be done I say, after some light, (Heb. 6. 4, 5.) Despitefully, (Heb. 10. 29.) Knowingly (2 Pet. 2. 21.) and wilfully (Heb.

19. 26. compared with ver. 29.) and that not in a hurry and sudden fit, as Peter's was: but with some time before-hand to pause upon it first, with Judas, and also with a continued Resolution never to turn or be converted again. For it is impossible to renew such again to Repentance, they are so resolved, and so desperate, Heb. 6.

Quest. And how sayest thou now? Didst thou ever after thou hadst received some blessed Light from Christ, wilfully, despitefully, and knowingly, stamp, or trample the Blood of the man Christ Jesus under thy Feet: and art thou for ever resolved so to do?

Answ. O no, I would not do that wilfully, despitefully, and knowingly, not for all the World,

Inqui. But yet I must tell you now you put me in mind of it, surely sometimes I have most horrible blasphemous Thoughts in me against God, Christ, and the Spirit: May not these be that Sin too?

Answ. Dost thou delight in them, are they such things as thou takest Pleasure in?

Reply. O no, neither would I do it for a thousand Worlds, O, methinks they make me sometimes tremble to think of them: But how and if I should delight in them before I am aware?

Answ.

Ans. Beg of God for strength against them, and if at any time thou findest thy wicked Heart to give way in the least thereto, (for that is likely enough) and though thou find it may on a sudden give way to that hell-bred Wickedness that is in it: yet do not despair, for as much as Christ hath said, *All manner of Sins and Blasphemies shall be forgiven to the Sons of Men. And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of Man, (that is Christ) as he may do with Peter, through Temptation, yet upon Repentance, it shall be forgiven him.* Mat. 12. 32.

Object. But I thought it might have been committed all on a sudden, either by some blasphemous Thought, or else by committing some other horrible Sin:

Ans. For certain this Sin and the commission of it, doth lie in a knowing, wilfull, malicious, or despitetul, together with a final trampling the Blood of sweet Jesus under foot, Heb. 10.

Object. But it seems to be rather a resisting of the Spirit, and the motions thereof, than this which you say; for first, its proper Title is the Sin against the Holy Ghost. And again, *They have done despite unto the Spirit of Grace.* So that it rather seems to be, I say, that a resisting of the Spirit, and the movings thereof is that Sin.

1 *Answ.* For certain the Sin is committed by them that do as before I have said, that is, by a final, knowing, wilful, malicious trampling under foot the Blood of Christ, which was shed on Mount *Calvary*, when Jesus was there crucified. And though it be called the Sin against the Spirit, yet (as I said before) every Sin against the Spirit is not that: for if it was, then every Sin against the Light and Convictions of the Spirit would be unpardonable: but that is an evident untruth, for these Reasons. First, because there be those who have sinned against the movings of the Spirit, and that knowingly too, and yet did not commit that. As *Jonah*, who when God had expressly by his Spirit bid him go to *Nineveh*, he runs thereupon quite another way. Secondly, because the very People that have sinned against the movings of the Spirit, are yet, if they do return, received to Mercy. Witness also *Jonah*, who though he had sinned against the movings of the Spirit of the Lord, in doing contrary thereunto, Yet when he called (as he saith) to the Lord, (out of the Belly of Hell) the Lord heard him, and gave him deliverance, and set him again about his work. (Read the whole story of that Prophet.)

2 *Answ.* But secondly, I shall shew you that it must needs be wilfully, knowingly, and a malicious

malicious rejecting of the man Christ Jesus as the Saviour: That is, counting his Blood, his Righteousness, his Intercession in his own Person (for he that rejects one rejects all) to be of no value, as to salvation: I say, this I shall shew you is the unpardonable Sin. And then afterwards in brief shew you why it is called the Sin against the Holy Ghost.

First, That man that doth reject, as aforesaid, the Blood, Death, Righteousness, Resurrection, Ascension, and Intercession of the man Christ, doth reject that Sacrifice, that Blood, that Righteousness, that Victory, that Rest, that God alone hath appointed for Salvation, (John 1. 29.) *Behold the Lamb* (or sacrifice) *of God. We have Redemption through his Blood,* (Ephes. 1. 7.) *That I may be found in him,* (to wit) in Christs Righteousness, with Christs own personal obedience to his Fathers Will, *Phil. 3. 7, 8, 9, 10.* By his Resurrection comes Justification, *Rom. 4. 25.* His Intercession now in his own Person in the Heavens, now absent from his Saints, is the cause of the Saints Perseverance, *2 Cor. 6, 7, 8.* also *Rom. 8. 33, 34, 35, 36, &c.*

Secondly, They that reject this Sacrifice, and the Merits of this Christ, which he by himself hath brought in for Sinners, hath rejected him through whom alone all the Promises of the New Testament, together with
all

all the Mercy discovered thereby, doth come unto poor Creatures ; *For all the promises in him are Yea, and in him Amen, unto the glory of God,* 2 Cor. 1. 20. And all spiritual Blessings are made over to us through him, *Ephes. 1. 3, 4.* That is, through, and in this Man (which is Christ) we have all our spiritual, Heavenly, and eternal Mercies.

Thirdly, He that doth knowingly, wilfully, and despitefully reject this man for Salvation, doth sin the unpardonable Sin ; because there is never another sacrifice to be offered, *Heb. 10. 26. There is no more offering for Sin ; there remaineth no more sacrifice for Sin, Heb. 10. 18.* (namely, than the offering of the body of Jesus Christ a Sacrifice *once for all,* Heb. 10. ver. 10. and 14. compared with ver. 18. and 26.) No, but they that shall after light, and clear conviction, reject the first offering of his Body for Salvation, do Crucify him the second time, which irrecoverably merits their own Damnation: *For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the Heavenly Gift ; and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost ; and have tasted the good Word of God, and the powers of the World to come : If they shall fall away to renew them again unto Repentance, seeing they Crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open Shame. If they fall away to*
renew

renew them again unto Repentance: And why so? seeing, saith the Apostle, they do crucifie to themselves the Son of God afresh, and do put him to open shame. O then! how miserably hath the Devil deceived some? In that he hath got them to reject the merits of the first offering of the Body of Christ; (which was for Salvation) and got them to trust in a fresh Crucifying of Christ, which unavoidably brings their speedy Damnation.

Fourthly, they that do reject this Man, as aforesaid, do sin the unpardonable Sin; because in rejecting him, they do make way for the Justice of God to break out upon them, and to handle them as it shall find them: which will be in the first place, Sinners against the first Covenant, which is the Soul-damning Covenant; and also despising of (even the Life, and Glory, and Consolations, Pardon, Grace, and Love; that is discovered in) the second Covenant; forasmuch as they reject this Mediator and Priest of the same, which is the Man Jesus. And the Man that doth so, I would fain see how his Sins should be pardoned, and his Soul saved; seeing the means (which is the Son of Man, the Son of Mary, and his Merits) is rejected. For saith he, If you believe not that I am he, you shall, mark, you shall, do what you can, you shall, appear where you can, you shall, follow Moses, Law or any holiness

holiness whatsoever, *you shall dye in your Sins,* Joh. 8. 24. So that, I say, the Sin that is called the unpardonable Sin, is a knowing, wilful, and despiteful rejecting of the sacrificing of the Son of Man the first time for Sin. And now to shew you why it is called the Sin against the Holy Ghost, as in these Scriptures, *Mat. 12. Heb. 10. Mark 3.*

First, Because they Sin against the manifest light of the Spirit, (as I said before) it is a Sin against the light of the Spirit: That is, they have been formerly enlightened into the nature of the Gospel, and the Merits of the Man Christ, and his Blood, Righteousness, Intercession, &c. And also professed and confessed the same, with some life and comfort in, and through the profession of him: Yet now against all that Light, maliciously, and with despite to all their former Profession, turn their backs, and trample upon the same.

Secondly, It is called the Sin against the Holy Ghost, because such a Person doth (as I may say) lay violent hands on it; one that sets himself in opposition to, and is resolved to resist all the motions that do come in from the Spirit to persuade the contrary. For I do verily believe, that men, in this very rejecting of the Son of God, after some knowledge of him, especially at their first resisting and refusing of him, they have certain motions
of

of the Spirit of God to dissuade them from so great a Soul-damning Act. But they, being filled with an over-powering measure of the Spirit of the Devil, do do despite unto these Convictions and Motions, by studying and contriving how they may answer them, and get from under the convincing nature of them; and therefore it is called a doing despite unto the Spirit of Grace, *Heb. 10. 29.* And so,

Thirdly, In that they do reject the beseechings of the Spirit, and all its gentle intreatings of the Soul, to tarry still in the same Doctrine.

Fourthly, In that they do reject the very Testimony of the Prophets and Apostles, with Christ himself: I say, their Testimony through the Spirit, of the Power, Vertue, Sufficiency, and Prevalency, of the Blood, Sacrifice, Death, Resurrection, Ascension, and Intercession of the man Christ Jesus, of which the Scriptures are full both in the Old and New Testament, as the Apostle saith, *For all the Prophets from Samuel, with them that follow after, have shewed of these days.* That is, in which Christ should be a Sacrifice for Sin, *Acts 3. 24.* compared with *Ver. 6. 13, 14, 15, 18, 26.* Again, saith he, *He therefore that despiseth, despiseth not man; but God, who hath also given unto us his Holy Spirit,*

rit, 1 Thes. 4. 8. That is, he rejecteth or despiseth the very Testimony of the Spirit.

Fifthly, It is called the Sin against the Holy Ghost, because he that doth reject and disown the Doctrine of Salvation by the man Christ Jesus, through believing in him, doth despise, resist, and reject the Wisdom of the Spirit; for the Wisdom of Gods Spirit did never more appear, than in its finding out a way for Sinners to be reconciled to God, by the death of this man; and therefore Christ, as he is a Sacrifice, is called *the Wisdom of God*. And again, when it doth reveal the Lord Jesus, it is called *the Spirit of Wisdom and Revelation in the Knowledge of him*, Ephel. 1. 17.

Object. But (some may say) the slighting, or rejecting of the Son of Man, (Jesus of Nazareth the Son of Mary) cannot be the Sin that is unpardonable, as is clear from that Scripture in the twelfth of Matthew, where he himself saith, *He that shall speak a Word against the Son of Man, it shall be forgiven him: but he that shall sin against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this World, nor in the World to come*, Ver. 32. Now by this it is clear that the Sin that is unpardonable is one thing, and the Sin against the Son of Man another; that Sin that is against the Son of Man is pardonable: but if that was the

the Sin against the Holy Ghost it would not be pardonable; therefore the Sin against the Son of Man is not the Sin against the Holy Ghost, the unpardonable Sin:

Ans^r. First, I do know full well that there are several Persons that have been pardoned, yet have sinned against the Son of Man: and that have for a time rejected him, as *Paul*, *1 Tim.* 1. 13, 14. Also the Jews, *Acts* 2. 36, 37. But there was an ignorant rejecting of him without the Enlightning, and Taste, and Feeling of the Power of the things of God, made mention of in the sixth of the *Hebrews*, the 3, 4, 5, 6, Verses.

Secondly, There is, and hath been a higher manner of sinning against the Son of Man, which also hath been, and is still pardonable; as in the case of *Peter*, who in a violent temptation, in a mighty hurry, upon a sudden denied him, and that after the Revelation of the Spirit of God from Heaven to him, that he (Jesus) was the Son of God, *Matth.* 16. 16, 17, 18. This also is pardonable, if there be a coming up again to repentance: (O rich Grace! O wonderful Grace! that God should be so full of Love to his poor Creatures, that though they do sin against the Son of God, either through ignorance, or some sudden violent charge breaking loose from Hell upon them.) but yet

yet take it for certain, that if a Man do flight and reject the Son of God, and the Spirit, in that manner as I have before hinted, that is, for a Man after some great measure of the enlightning by the Spirit of God, and some Profession of Jesus Christ to be the Saviour, and his Blood that was shed on the Mount without the Gates of *Jerusalem* to be the Attonement; I say, he that shall after this, knowingly, wilfully, and out of malice and despite, reject, speak against, and trample that Doctrine under foot, resolving for ever so to do: And if he there continue, I will pawn my Soul upon it, he hath sinned the unpardonable Sin, and shall never be forgiven neither in this World nor in the World to come; or else those Scriptures that testify the Truth of this must be scabbed out, and must be looked upon for meer Fables; which are these following. *For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the World, through the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, (which is the Son of Man, Matth. 16. 13.) and are again intangled therein, and overcome; (which must be by denying this Lord that bought them, 2 Pet. 2. 1.) the latter end is worse with them than the beginning, 2 Pet. 2. 20. For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened and have tasted of the Heavenly Gift. — And have tasted the good Word of God, and the powers*

powers of the World to come: If they shall fall away (not only fall, but fall away; that is, finally, Heb. 10. 19.) it is impossible to renew them again unto Repentance; and the Reason is rendred, seeing they have crucified to themselves the Son of God (which is the Son of Man) afresh, and put him to an open shame, Heb. 6. 4, 5, 6. Now if you would further know what it is to Crucifie the Son of God afresh: it is this. For to undervalue and trample under foot the Merits and Vertue of his Blood for Remission of Sins, as is clearly manifested in the tenth of the Hebrews, 26, 27, 28, Verses, where it's said, For if we Sin wilfully after we have received the knowledge of the Truth, there remaineth no more Sacrifice for Sins; But a certain fearful looking for of Judgment, and the fiery Indignation, which shall devour the Adversaries. He that despised Moses Law died without Mercy; of how much sorer Punishment suppose ye shall be thought worthy, that have trodden under foot the Son of God, (there is the second Crucifying of Christ which the Quakers think to be saved by) and hath counted the Blood of the Covenant wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing. And then followeth, And hath done despite unto the Spirit of Grace, Verse the twenty ninth. All that Paul had to keep him from this Sin, it was his ignorance in persecuting the Man, and

Merits of Jesus Christ, *Acts 9*. But I obtained Mercy (saith he) because I did it ignorantly, *1 Tim. 1. 14*. And *Peter*, though he did deny him knowingly, yet he did it unwillingly, and in a sudden and fearful Temptation, and so by the Intercession of Jesus escaped that Danger. So, I say, they that commit this Sin, they do it after Light, knowingly, wilfully, and despitefully, and in the open view of the whole World, reject the Son of Man for being their Lord and Saviour, and in that it is called the Sin against the holy Ghost. It is a Name most fit for this Sin to be called the Sin against the Holy Ghost, for these Reasons but now laid down; for this Sin is immediately committed against the Motions and Convictions, and Light of that Holy Spirit of God, that makes it its business to hand forth, and manifest the Truth and Reality of the Merits and Vertues of the Lord Jesus, the Son of Man. And therefore beware Ranters and Quakers, for I am sure you are the nearest that Sin by profession (which is indeed the right committing of it) of any Persons that I do know at this day under the whole Heavens; for as much as you will not venture the Salvation of your Souls on the Blood shed on Mount *Calvary*, *Luke 23. 33*. out of the side of that Man that was offered up in Sacrifice for all that did believe, in
that

that his offering up of his Body at that time (either before he offered it, or that have, do, or shall believe on it for the time since, together with that time that he offered it) though formerly you did profess that Salvation was wrought out that way, by that Sacrifice then offered, and also seemed to have some comfort thereby ; yea, insomuch that some of you declared the same in the hearing of many, professing your selves to be believers of the same. O therefore ! it is sad for you that were once thus enlightned, and have tasted these good things ; and yet notwithstanding all your Profession, you are now turned from the simplicity that is in Christ to another Doctrine which will be to your destruction, if you continue in it ; for without Blood there is no Remission, *Heb. 9. 22.*

Many other Reasons might be given, but that I would not be too tedious : yet I would put in this Caution, that if there be any Souls that be but now willing to venture their Salvation upon the Merits of a Naked Jesus, I do verily for the present believe, they have not sinned that Sin ; because there is still a promise holds forth it self to such a Soul, where Christ saith, *He that comes to me, I will in no wise* (for nothing that he hath done) *cast him out, John 6. 36.* That promise is worthy to be written in Letters of Gold.

308. *Objections answered for their comfort, who*

Object. But alas, though I should never sin that Sin, yet I have other sins enough to Damn me?

Answ. What though thou had'st the sins of a thousand Sinners; yet if thou come to Christ he will save thee, *Joh. 6. 36.* see also *Heb. 7. 25.*

Object. Alas! but how should I come? I doubt I do not come as I should do; my Heart is naught and dead; and alas, then how should I come?

Answ. Why, bethink thy self of all the sins that ever thou did'st commit, and lay the weight of them all upon thy Heart, till thou art down loaden with the same, and come to him in such a Case as this, and he will give thee rest for thy Soul, *Mat. 11.* the three last Verses.

And again, if thou wouldest know how thou shouldest come, come as much undervaluing thy self as ever thou canst, saying, Lord, here is a Sinner, the basest in all the Country, if I had my deserts I had been damned in Hell Fire long ago: Lord, I am not worthy to have the least corner in the Kingdom of Heaven: and yet, O that thou wouldest have Mercy! Come like *Benhadad's* Servants to the King of *Israel*, *1 Kin. 20. 31, 32.* with a Rope about thy Neck, and fling thy self down at Christ's feet, and lye there a while, striving with him by thy Prayers, and I'll warrant

would have their part in the New Covenant. 329
warrant thee speed, Mat. 11. 28, 29, 30.
John 6. 37.

Object. O! but I am not sanctified.

Ans. He will sanctifie thee, and be made thy Sanctification also, 1 *Cor.* 6. 10, 11. 1 *Cor.* 1. 30.

Object. O! but I cannot Pray.

Ans. To Pray, is not for thee to down on thy Knees, and say over a many Scripture words only; for that thou may'st do, and yet do nothing but babble: But if thou from a sense of thy baseness canst groan out thy Hearts desire before the Lord, he will hear thee, and grant thy desire; for he can tell what is the meaning of the groanings of the Spirit, *Rom.* 8. 26, 27.

Object. O, but I am afraid to Pray, for fear my Prayers should be counted as sin in the sight of the great God.

Ans. That is a good sign that thy Prayers are more than bare words, and have some prevalence at the Throne of Grace through Christ Jesus, or else the Devil would never seek to labour to beat thee off from Prayer, by undervaluing thy Prayers, telling thee they are Sin; for the best Prayers he will call the worst, and the worst he will call the best, or else how should he be a Liar.

Object. But, I am afraid the day of Grace is past, and if it should be so, what should I do then?

310 *Objections answered for their comfort, who*

Answ. Truly, with some men indeed it doth fare thus, that the day of Grace is at an end before their Lives are at an end. Or thus, the day of Grace is past before the day of Death is come, (as Christ saith) *If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things that belong unto thy Peace, (that is, the word of Grace or Reconciliation) but now it is hid from thine Eyes, Luke 19. 41, 42.* But for the better satisfying of thee, as touching this thing, Consider these following things.

First, doth the Lord knock still at the door of thy Heart by his Word and Spirit? If so, then the day of Grace is not past with thy Soul; for where he doth so knock, there he doth also proffer, and promise to come in and Sup, (that is, to Communicate of his things unto them) which he would not do, was the day of Grace past with the Soul, *Rev. 3. 20.*

But how should I know whether Christ do so knock at my heart, as to be desirous to come in? That I may know also whether the day of Grace be past with me or no?

Consider these things.

First, doth the Lord make thee sensible of thy miserable state, without an interest in Jesus Christ? and that naturally thou hast no share in him, no faith in him, no communion with him, no delight in him, or love in
the

would have their part in the New Covenant. 311

the least to him? If he hath, and is doing of this, he hath, and is knocking at thy Heart.

Secondly, doth he, together with this, put into thy Heart an earnest desire after communion with him, together with holy Resolutions not to be satisfied without real communion with him.

Thirdly, doth he sometimes give thee some secret persuasions (though not scarcely discernable) that thou mayest attain, and get an interest in him?

Fourthly, doth he now and then glance in some of the promises into thy Heart, causing them to leave some heavenly savour (though but for a very short time) on thy Spirit?

Fifthly, dost thou at some time see some little Excellency in Christ? and doth all this stir up in thy Heart some breathings after him? If so, then fear not, the Day of Grace is not past with thy poor Soul; for if the day of Grace should be past with such a Soul as this, then that Scripture must be broken, where Christ saith, *He that cometh unto me, I will in no wise* (for no thing, by no means, upon no terms whatsoever) *cast out,* John 6.

37.

Object. But surely if the day of Grace was not past with me, I should not be so long without an answer of Gods love to my Soul;

312 *Objections answered for their comfort, who*
that therefore doth make me mistrust my
state the more, is, that I wait and wait, and
yet am not delivered.

Ans. Hast thou waited on the Lord so
long as the Lord hath waited on thee; it
may be the Lord hath waited on thee this
twenty or thirty, yea forty years, or more,
and thou hast not waited on him seven years;
cast this into thy Mind therefore when Satan
tells thee, that God doth not love thee, be-
cause thou hast waited so long without an as-
surance; (for it is his temptation) for God
did wait longer upon thee, and was fain to
send to thee by his Ambassadors, time after
time: And therefore say thou, *I will wait to*
see what the Lord will say unto me; and the
rather, because *he will speak Peace*, for he is
the Lord thereof.

But secondly, Know that it is not thy being
under trouble a long time, that will be an
Argument sufficient to prove that thou art
past hopes; Nay contrariwise; for Jesus Christ
did take our Nature upon him, and also did
undertake deliverance for those, and bring
it in for them *who were all their Life Time*
subject to Bondage, Heb. 2. 14, 15.

Object. But alas, I am not able to wait, all
my Strength is gone, I have waited so long
I can wait no longer.

Ans.

would have their part in the New Covenant. 313

Anfw. It may be thou hast concluded on this long ago, thinking thou shouldest not be able to hold out any longer; no not a year, a month, or a week, nay, it may be not so long. It may be in the morning thou hast thought thou shouldest not hold out till night, and at night till morning again: yet the Lord hath supported thee, and kept thee in waiting upon him many Weeks, and Years; therefore that is but the Temptation of the Devil to make thee think so, that he might drive thee to despair of Gods Mercy, and so to leave off following the ways of God, and to close in with thy Sins again. O therefore do not give way unto it; but believe that thou shalt see the Goodness of the Lord in the Land of the Living. Wait on the Lord, be of good Courage, and he shall strengthen thine Heart; wait, I say, on the Lord, Psal. 27. 23, 24. And that thou mayest so do, consider these things.

First, If thou, after thou hast waited thus long, shouldest now give over, and wait no longer, thou wouldest lose all thy time and pains that thou hast taken in the way of God hitherto, and wilt be like to a man that because he sought long for Gold, and did not find it; therefore turned back from seeking after it, though he was hard by it, and had almost found it: and all because he was loth to look and seek a little further.

Secondly,

314 *Objections answered for their Comfort, who*

Secondly, Thou wilt not only lose thy time, but also lose thy own Soul; for Salvation is no where else but in Jesus Christ, *Acts 4. 12.*

Thirdly, Thou wilt sin the highest sin that ever thou didst sin before, in drawing (finally) back, insomuch, that God may say, my Soul shall have no pleasure in him, *Heb. 10. 38.*

But secondly, consider, thou sayest all my strength is gone, and therefore how should I wait? why at that time when thou feelest, and findest thy strength quite gone, even that is the time when the Lord will renew, and give thee fresh strength. *The youths shall faint and be weary, and the young men shall utterly fall: but they that wait upon the Lord, shall renew their strength, they shall mount up with Wings as Eagles, they shall run and not be weary, they shall walk and not be faint, Isa. 40. 30, 31.*

Objeēt. But though I do wait, yet if I be not elected to eternal Life, what good will all my waiting do me? *For it is not in him that willeth, nor in him that runneth, but of God that sheweth Mercy.* Therefore I say, if I should not be elected, all is in vain.

1 Answ. Why, in the first place, to be sure thy backsliding from God will not prove thy election, neither thy growing weary of waiting upon God.

2 Answ.

would have their part in the New Covenant. 315

2 *Ans.* But secondly, Thou art it may be troubled to know whether thou art elected: And sayest thou; if I did but know that, that would encourage me in my waiting on God.

Ans. I believe thee; but mark, thou shalt not know thy election in the first place, but in the second. That is to say, thou must first get acquaintance with God in Christ, which doth come by thy giving credit to his Promises, and Records which he hath given of Jesus Christ, his Blood and Righteousness, together with the rest of his Merits.

That is, before thou canst know whether thou art elected, thou must believe in Jesus Christ so really, that thy faith laying hold of, and drinking and eating the Flesh and Blood of Christ, even so, that there shall be life begotten in thy Soul by the same. Life from the condemnings of the Law, Life from the guilt of Sin. Life over the filth of the same. Life also to walk with God in his Son and wayes; the Life of Love to God the Father, and Jesus Christ his Son, Saints, and Wayes; and that because they are Holy, Harmless, and such that are altogether contrary to Iniquity.

For these things must be in thy Soul as a forerunner of thy being made acquainted with the other: God hath these two ways to shew to his Children their election.

First,

316 *Objections answered for their comfort, who*

First, by Testimony of the Spirit. That is, the Soul being under trouble of Conscience, and grieved for Sin, the Spirit doth seal up the Soul by its comfortable Testimony; persuading of the Soul, that God for Christs sake hath forgiven all those Sins that lye so heavy on the Conscience, and that do so much perplex the Soul, by shewing it that that Law which doth utter such horrible curses against it, is by Christs Blood satisfied, and fulfilled, *Eph. 1. 13, 14.*

Secondly, By consequence; that is, the Soul finding that God hath been good unto it, in that he hath shewed it its lost state and miserable condition: and also that he hath given it some comfortable hope that he will save it from the same: I say, the Soul, from a right sight thereof, doth, or may, draw this conclusion, that if God had not been minded to have saved it, he would not have done for it such things as these. But for the more surer dealing with thy Soul, it is not good to take any of these apart; that is, it is not good to take the Testimony of the Spirit, (as thou supposest thou hast) from the fruits thereof, so as to conclude the Testimony thou hast received, to be a sufficient ground without the other; (not that it is not, if it be the Testimony of the Spirit) but because the Devil doth also deceive Souls by the workings

would have their part in the New Covenant. 317

ings of his Spirit in them, pretending that it is the Spirit of God. And again, thou shouldst not satisfie thy self, though thou do find some seekings in thee after that which is good, without the testimony of the other, that is to say, of the Spirit; for it is the Testimony of two that is to be taken for truth: Therefore say I, as thou shouldest be much in praying for the Spirit to testifie assurance to thee, so also thou shouldest look to the end of it when thou thinkest thou hast it; which is this, to shew thee that it is alone for Christs sake that thy sins are forgiven thee, and also thereby a constraining of thee to advance him, both by Words, and Works, in Holiness and righteousness all the Dayes of thy Life. From hence thou mayest boldly conclude thy Election, *1 Thes. 3. 4, 5, 6. Remembering without ceasing your Work of Faith, and Labour of Love, and Patience of hope in our Lord Jesus Christ, in the sight of God our Father: Knowing, Brethren (saith the Apostle) beloved, your Election of God. But how? why by this, For our Gospel came not to you in word only, but also in Power, and in the Holy Ghost, and in much assurance.—— And ye became followers of us, and of the Lord, having received the Word in much affliction, with Joy of the Holy Ghost: So that you were ensamples to all that believe in Macedonia and Achaia. And to wait for*

318 *Objections answered for their comfort, who
for his Son from Heaven, whom he raised from
the dead, even Jesus which (hath) delivered
us from the wrath to come, ver. 10.*

Object. But alas, for my part, instead of finding in me any thing that is good, I find in me all manner of Wickedness, Hard-heartedness, Hypocrisie, coldness of Affection to Christ, very great unbelief, together with every thing that is Base, and of an ill Savour. What hope therefore can I have ?

Ans. If thou wast not such a one, thou hadst no need of Mercy. If thou wast whole, thou hadst no need of the Physician; dost thou therefore see thy self in such a sad Condition as this ? Thou hast the more need to come to Christ, that thou mayest be not only cleansed from these Evils, but also that thou mayest be delivered from that Wrath they will bring upon thee (if thou do not get rid of them) to all Eternity.

Quest. But how should I do ? and what course should I take to be delivered from this sad and troublesome Condition ?

Ans. Dost thou see in thee all manner of Wickedness ? The best way that I can direct a Soul in such a case, is, to pitch a steadfast Eye on him that is full, and to look so steadfastly upon him by Faith, that thereby thou mayest even draw down of his fulness into thy Heart ; for that is the right way, and the

would have their part in the New Covenant. 319

the way that was typed out (before Christ came in the Flesh) in the time of *Moses*, when the Lord said unto him, *Make thee a Serpent of Brasse* (which was a Type of Christ) and set it upon a Pole ; and it shall come to pass that when a Serpent hath bitten any Man, that he may look thereon and live, Numb. 21. 8.

Even so now in Gospel times, when any Soul is bitten with the fiery Serpents (their Sins) that then the next way to be healed, is, for the Soul to look upon the Son of Man, who, as the Serpent was, was hanged on a Pole, (or Tree) that whosoever shall indeed look on him by Faith, may be healed of all their Distempers whatsoever, *John 3: 14, 15.*

As now to instance in some things. First, is thy Heart hard? why then, behold how full of Bowels and Compassion is the Heart of Christ towards thee, which may be seen in his coming down from Heaven to spill his Heart-Blood for thee.

2. Is thy Heart slothful and idle? then see how active the Lord Jesus is for thee, in that he did not only die for thee : but also in that he hath been ever since his Ascension into Heaven, making Intercession for thee, *Heb. 7. 25.*

3. Dost thou see and find in thee Iniquity and Unrighteousness? Then look up to Heaven, and see there a Righteous Person, even

320 *Objections answered for their comfort, who*
even thy righteous Jesus Christ, now presenting thee in his own Perfections before the Throne of his Fathers Glory, 1 Cor. 1. 30.

4. Dost thou see that thou art very much void of right Sanctification? then look up and thou shalt see that thy Sanctification is in the presence of God a compleat Sanctification, representing all the Saints as (Righteous, so) sanctified ones in the Presence of the great God of Heaven. And so whatsoever thou wantest, be sure to strive to pitch thy Faith upon the Son of God, and behold him stedfastly, and thou shalt by so doing find a mighty change in thy Soul. *For when we behold him, as in a Glass, even the Glory of the Lord, we are changed* (namely by beholding) *from Glory to Glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord,* 2 Cor. 3. 18. This is the true way to get both Comfort to thy Soul, and also Sanctification, and right Holiness into thy Soul.

Poor Souls that are under the Distemper of a guilty Conscience, and under the workings of much Corruption, do not go the nearest way to Heaven, if they do not in the first place look upon themselves as cursed Sinners by the Law; and yet at that time they are blessed, for ever blessed Saints, by the Merits of Jesus Christ. *O wretched Man that I am,* saith *Paul,* and yet *O blessed Man that I am* through my Lord Jesus Christ : for
that

would have their part in the New Covenant: 321
that is the Scope of the Scripture, Rom.
7. 24, 25.

Object. But alas, I am blind and cannot see;
what shall I do now ?

Answ. Why truly thou must go to him
that can make the Eyes that are blind to see
(even to our Lord Jesus) by Prayer, saying
as the poor blind Man did, *Lord, that I might
receive my Sight,* and so continue begging
with him, till thou do receive Sight, even a
sight of Jesus Christ, his Death, Blood, Re-
surrection, Ascension, Intercession, and that
for thee, even for thee.

And the rather, because first, he hath in-
vited thee to come and buy such Eye-salve
of him that may make thee see. *Rev. 3: 18.*
Secondly, because thou shalt never have any
true comfort till thou dost thus come to see,
and behold the Lamb of God that hath taken
away thy Sins. *John 1. 29.* Thirdly, because
that thereby thou wilt be able (through Grace)
to step over, and turn aside from the several
stumbling-blocks that Satan, together with
his Instruments hath laid in our way, which
otherwise thou wilt not be able to shun, but
wilt certainly fall when others stand, and
grope and stumble, when others go upright,
to the great Prejudice of thy poor Soul.

Object. But alas I have nothing to carry
with me, how then should I go?

Y

Answ.

322 *Objections answered for their comfort, who*

Answ. Hast thou no Sins? If thou hast, carry them, and exchange them for his Righteousness; because he hath said, *Cast thy Burthen upon the Lord, and he will sustain thee; Psal. 55. 22.* and again, because he hath said, Though thou be heavy laden, yet if thou do but come to him, he will give thee rest, *Mat. 11. 28.*

Object. But (you will say) Satan telleth me that I am so cold in Prayers, so weak in believing, so great a Sinner, that I do go so slothfully on in the way of God, that I am so apt to slip at every Temptation, and to be entangled therewith, together with other things, so that I shall never be able to attain those blessed things that are held forth to sinners by Jesus Christ: and therefore my trouble is much upon this account also, and many times I fear that will come upon me which Satan suggesteth to me; that is, I shall miss of eternal Life.

1. *Answ.* As to the latter part of the Objection, that thou shalt never attain to everlasting Life: That is obtained for thee already, without thy doing, either thy praying, striving, or wrestling against sin. If we speak properly, it is Christ that hath in his own Body abolished Death on the Cross, and brought Light, Life, and Glory to us, through this his thus doing. But this is the thing that thou

would have their part in the New Covenant. 323

thou aimest at, that thou shalt never have a share in this Life already obtained for so many as do come by Faith to Jesus Christ: and all because thou art so slothful, so cold, so weak, so great a Sinner, so subject to slip and commit Infirmities.

2. *Ans.* I answer, Didst thou never learn for to out-shoot the Devil in his own Bow, and to cut off his Head with his own Sword, as *David* served *Goliath*, who was a Type of him.

Quest. O how should a poor Soul do this? this is rare indeed.

Ans. Why truly thus, Doth Satan tell thee thou prayest but faintly, and with very cold Devotion; answer him thus, and say, I am glad you told me, for this will make me trust the more to Christs Prayers, and the less to my own; also I will endeavour henceforward to groan, to sigh, and to be so fervent in my crying at the Throne of Grace, that I will, If I can, make the Heavens rattle again, with the mighty Groans thereof. And whereas thou sayest that I am so weak in believing, I am glad you mind me of it, I hope it will henceforward stir me up to try the more heartily to God for strong Faith, and make me the more restless till I have it. And seeing thou tellest me that I run so softly, and that I shall go near to miss of Glory;

324 *Objections answered for their comfort, who*
this also shall be through Grace to my advantage, and cause me to press the more earnestly towards the mark, for the price of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus. And seeing thou doest tell me that my Sins are wondrous great; hereby thou bringest the remembrance of the unsupportable Vengeance of God into my mind, if I dye out of Jesus Christ, and also the necessity of the Blood, Death, and Merits of Christ to help me; I hope it will make me fly the faster, and press the harder after an interest in him; and the rather because (as thou tellest me) my state will be unspeakable miserable without him. And so all along, if he tell thee of thy Deadness, Dulness, Coldness, or Unbelief, or the greatness of thy Sins; answer him, and say, I am glad you told me, I hope it will be a means to make me run faster, seek earnestlier, and to be the more restless after Jesus Christ. If thou didst but get this art, as to out-run him in his own Shooes, (as I may say) and to make his own Darts to pierce himself, then thou mightest also say, now doth Satans Temptations, as well as all other things, work together for my Good, for my Advantage, *Rom. 8. 28.*

Object. But I do find so many weaknesses in every Duty that I do perform, as when I pray, when I read, when I hear, or any other
Duty,

would have their part in the New Covenant. 325

Duty, that it maketh me out of conceit with my self, it maketh me think that my Duties are nothing worth.

Ans. I answer, It may be it is thy Mercy that thou art sensible of Infirmities in thy best things thou doest, I, a greater Mercy then thou art aware of.

Quest. Can it be a Mercy for me to be troubled with my Corruptions? Can it be a Priviledge for me to be annoyed with Infirmities, and to have my best Duties infected with it? How can it possibly be?

Ans. Verily thy Sins appearing in thy best Duties, do work for thy Advantage these wayes. First, in that thou findest ground enough thereby to make thee humble; and when thou hast done all, yet to count thy self but an unprofitable Servant. And secondly, thou by this means art taken off from leaning on any thing below a naked Jesus for eternal Life. It is like, if thou wast not sensible of many by-Thoughts and Wickednesses in thy best Performances, thou wouldest go near to be some proud, abominable Hypocrite, or a silly, proud, dissembling Wretch at the best, such a one as would send thy Soul to the Devil in a bundle of thy own Righteousness: but now thou, through Grace, seest that all and every thing thou doest, there is sin enough in it to condemn thee. This in

326 *Objections answered for their comfort, who*
the first place makes thee have a care of
trusting in thy own doings. And secondly,
sheweth thee that there is nothing in thy self
which will do thee any good, by working in
thee, as to the meritorious cause of thy Sal-
vation: No, but thou must have a share in
the Birth of Jesus, in the Death of Jesus, in
the Blood, Resurrection, Ascension, and In-
tercession of a crucified Jesus? And how say-
est thou? doth not thy finding of this in thee,
cause thee to flie from a depending on thy
own doings? And doth it not also make thee
the more earnestly to groan after the Lord
Jesus? Yea, and let me tell thee also, it will
be a cause to make thee admire the freeness
and tender-heartedness of Christ to thee,
when he shall lift up the light of his Counte-
nance upon thee, because he hath regarded
such a one as *thou*, sinful *thou*: And therefore
in this sense it will be a mercy to the Saints,
that they do find the reliques of sin still strug-
gling in their Hearts; But this is not simply
the nature of sin, but the Mercy and Wis-
dom of God, who causeth *all things to work*
together for the good of those that love and fear
God, Rom. 8. And therefore whatever thou
findest in thy Soul, though it be sin of never
so black a Soul-scaring nature, let it move
thee to run the faster to the Lord Jesus Christ,
and thou shalt not be ashamed, that is, of thy
running to him. But

would have their part in the New Covenant. 327

But secondly, When thou doest apprehend that thou art defiled, and also thy best Duties annoyed with many Weaknesses, let that Scripture come into thy Thoughts, which saith, *Of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us Wisdom, Righteousness, Sanctification, and Redemption.* And if thou shalt understand that, what thou canst not find in thy self, thou shalt find in Christ. Art thou a Fool in thy self, then Christ is made of God thy Wisdom. Art thou Unrighteous in thy self, Christ is made of God thy Righteousness? Doest thou find that there is but very little sanctifying Grace in thy Soul? still here is Christ made thy Sanctification; and all this in his own Person without thee, without thy Wisdom, without thy Righteousness, without thy Sanctification, without in his own Person in thy Fathers presence, appearing there perfect Wisdom, Righteousness, and Sanctification in his own Person, I say, as a publick Person for thee: So that thou mayest believe and say to thy Soul, My Soul, though thou doest find innumerable Infirmities in thy self, and in thy Actions; yet look upon thy Jesus, the man Jesus, he is Wisdom, and that for thee, to govern thee, to take care for thee, and to order all things for the best for thee. He is also thy Righteousness now at Gods right Hand alwayes shining be-

328 *Objections answered for their comfort, who*
fore the Eyes of his Glory : So that there it
is unmovable, though thou art in never such
a sad Condition, yet thy Righteousness,
which is the Son of God, God-man, shines as
bright as ever, and is as much accepted of God
as ever : (O this sometimes hath been Life to
me) And so, whatever thou, O my Soul, find-
est wanting in thy self, through Faith, thou
shalt see all laid up for thee in Jesus Christ,
whether it be Wisdom, Righteousness, San-
ctification, or Redemption. Nay, not only
so : but as I said before, he is all these in his
own Person without thee in the presence of
his Father for thee.

Object. But now, if any should say in their
Hearts, O, but I am one of the Old Cove-
nant-men I doubt; that is, I doubt I am not
within this glorious Covenant of Grace. And
how if I should not?

Ans. Well, thou fearest that thou art one
of the Old Covenant, a Son of the Bond-
woman. In the first place, know that thou
wast one of them by Nature; for all by Na-
ture are under that Covenant: but set the
case that thou art to this day under that, yet
let me tell thee in the first place, there is
hopes for thee; for there is a gap open, a way
made for Souls to come from under the Co-
venant of Works, by Christ, *For he hath*
broken down the middle Wall of Partition be-
tween

would have their part in the New Covenant 329

tween us and you. Ephes. 2. 14. And therefore if thou wouldest be saved thou mayest come to Christ. If thou wantest a righteousness (as I said before) there is one in Christ. If thou wouldest be washed, thou mayest come to Christ, and if thou wouldest be justified, there is justification enough in the Lord Jesus Christ. That's the first.

Ans. 2. And secondly, thou canst not be so willing to come to Christ, as he is willing thou shouldest come to him; witness his coming down from Heaven, his Humiliation, his spilling of his Blood from both his Cheeks, *Luke 23. 44.* by sweat, under the burden of sin, and his shedding of it by the Spear, when he hanged on the Cross. It appears also by his Promises, by his Invitations, by his sending forth his Messengers to preach the same to poor Sinners, and threatneth Damnation upon this very account, namely, the neglect of him; and declares that all the thousands, and ten thousands of sins in the World, should not be able to damn those that believed in him; that he would pardon all, forgive and pass by all if they would but come unto him: moreover, promiseth to cast out none, no, not the poorest, vilest, contemptiblest Creature in the whole World. *Come unto me all* (every one, though you be never so many, never so vile, though your
Load

330 *Objections answered for their comfort, who*
Load be never so heavy and intollerable,
though you deserve no help, not the least
help, no Mercy, not the least compassion)
yet cast your Burthen upon me, and you shall
find rest for your Souls. Come unto me, and I
will heal you, love you, teach you, and tell
you the way to the Kingdom of Heaven :
Come unto me and I will succor you, help
you, and keep you from all Devils and their
Temptations, from the Law and its Curses,
and from being for ever overcome with any
evil whatsoever. Come unto me for what
you need, and tell me what you would have,
or what you would have me do for you, and
all my Strength, Love, Wisdom, and Inter-
est that I have with my Father shall be laid
out for you. Come unto me, your sweet Je-
sus, your loving and tender-hearted Jesus,
your everlasting and sin-pardoning Jesus.
Come unto me, and I will wash you, and put
my Righteousness upon you, pray to my Fa-
ther for you, and send my Spirit into you
that you might be saved. Therefore,

Consider besides this, what a priviledge
thou shalt have at the day of Judgment above
thousands, if thou do indeed and in truth
close in with this Jesus and accept of him; for
thou shalt not only have a Priviledge in this
Life only, but in the Life Everlasting, even
at the time of Christs second coming from
Heaven ;

would have their part in the New Covenant. 331

Heaven ; for then when there shall be the whole World gathered together, and all the good Angels, bad Angels, Saints, and Reprobates, when all thy Friends and Kindred with thy Neighbours on thy Right-hand and on the left shall be with thee, beholding of the wonderful Glory and Majesty of the Son of God ; then shall the Son of Glory, even Jesus, in the very view and sight of them all, smile and look kindly upon thee ; when a smile or a kind look from Christ shall be worth more then ten thousand Worlds, then thou shalt have it. You know it is counted an honour for a poor man to be favourably looked upon by a Judge, or a King in the sight of Lords, Earls, Dukes, and Princes ; why thus it will be with thee in the sight of all the Princely Saints, Angels, and Devils, in the sight of all the great Nobles in the World : then even thou that closest in with Christ, be thou rich or poor, be thou bond or free, wise or foolish, if thou close in with him, he will say unto thee, *Well done good and faithful Servant*, even in the midst of the whole World ; they that love thee shall see it, and they that hate thee shall all to their shame behold it ; for if thou fear him here in secret, he will make it manifest even at that day upon the House top.

Secondly,

Secondly, not only thus; but thou shalt also be lovingly received, and tenderly embraced of him at that day, when Christ hath thousands of gallant Saints, as old *Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, David, Isaiah, Jeremiah*, together with all the Prophets and Apostles, and Martyrs, attending on him; together with many thousands of glittering Angels ministering before him: besides, when the ungodly shall appear there with their pale Faces, with their guilty Consciences, and trembling Souls, that would then give thousands and ten thousands of Worlds, (if they had so many) if they could enjoy but one loving look from Christ. I say then, then shalt thou have the hand of Christ reached to thee kindly to receive thee, saying, Come thou blessed, step up hither; thou wast willing to leave all for me, and now will I give all to thee; here is a Throne, a Crown, a Kingdom, take them; thou wast not ashamed of me when thou wast in the World among my Enemies, and now will not I be ashamed of thee before thine Enemies, but will in the view of all these Devils and damned Reprobates promote thee to Honour and Dignity. *Come ye blessed of my Father, inherit the Kingdom prepared for you from the Foundation of the World*: Thou shalt see that those who have served me in truth, shall lose nothing by

would have their part in the New Covenant. 333

by the means : No, but ye shall be as Pillars in my Temple, and Inheritours of my Glory, and shall have a place to walk in among my Saints and Angels, *Zech. 3. 7.* O ! Who would not be in this Condition ? Who would not be in this Glory ? It will be such a Soul-ravishing Glory, that I am ready to think the whole reprobate World will be ready to run mad, *Deut. 28. 34.* to think that they should miss of it ; then will the vilest Drunkard, Swearer, Liar, and unclean Person willingly cry, *Lord, Lord, open to us ;* yet be denied of entrance, and thou in the mean time embraced, entertained, made welcome, have a fair Mitre set upon thy Head, and clothed with immortal Glory, *Zech. 3. 5.* O therefore let all this move thee, and be of weight upon thy Soul to close in with Jesus, this tender-hearted Jesus. And if yet for all what I have said, thy Sins do still stick with thee, and thou findest thy hellish Heart loath to let them go, think with thy self in this manner. Shall I have my Sins, and lose my Soul ? Will they do me any good when Christ comes ? Would not Heaven be better to me then my Sins ? And the Company of God, Christ, Saints, and Angels be better then the Company of *Cain, Judas, Balaam*, with the Devils in the Furnace of Fire. Canst thou now that readest or hearest these Lines, turn thy

334 *Objections answered for their comfort, &c.*

thy Back, and go on in thy Sins? Canst thou set so light of Heaven, of God, of Christ, and the Salvation of thy poor, yet precious Soul? Canst thou hear of Christ, his bloody Sweat and Death, and not be taken with it, and not be grieved for it, and also converted by it? If so, I might lay thee down several Considerations to stir thee up to mend thy pace towards Heaven; but I shall not, there is enough written already to leave thy Soul without excuse, and to bring thee down with a Vengeance into Hell-fire, devouring Fire, the Lake of Fire, eternal, everlasting Fire; O! to make thee swim and roul up and down in the Flames of the Furnace of Fire.

31 DE 60

marion j. may

The End.

1851

William Lloyd

Thomas [unclear]

And diligently lest are
you while of the grave
saying if thou be
that thy sup pass
me. Now this I say not
in vain but things be done
after remembrance the
day of our favour to
get the soul know thou that
our thrive and to work
and next to [unclear]

Mr. Peter the Cooke
[unclear] him [unclear] [unclear]
[unclear] [unclear] [unclear]
[unclear] [unclear] [unclear]

Thos

